

Philip Schuyler

Philip John Schuyler (/ˈʃkaɪlər/; November 20 [O.S.] November 9] 1733 – November 18, 1804) was an American general in the Revolutionary War and a United States Senator from New York.^[2] He is usually known as **Philip Schuyler**, while his son is usually known as Philip J. Schuyler.

Born in Albany, Province of New York, into the prosperous Schuyler family, Schuyler fought in the French and Indian War. He won election to the New York General Assembly in 1768 and to the Continental Congress in 1775. He planned the Continental Army's 1775 Invasion of Quebec, but poor health forced him to delegate command of the invasion to Richard Montgomery. He prepared the Continental Army's defense of the 1777 Saratoga campaign, but was replaced by General Horatio Gates as the commander of Continental forces in the theater. Schuyler resigned from the Continental Army in 1779.

Schuyler served in the New York State Senate for most of the 1780s and supported the ratification of the United States Constitution. He represented New York in the 1st United States Congress but lost his state's 1791 Senate election to Aaron Burr. After a period in the state senate, he won election to the United States Senate again in 1797, affiliating with the Federalist Party. He resigned due to poor health the following year. He was the father of Elizabeth Schuyler Hamilton and the father-in-law of Secretary of the Treasury Alexander Hamilton.

Contents

Early life

American Revolution

Saratoga campaign

Later career

Personal life

Legacy

Place names

Works of art

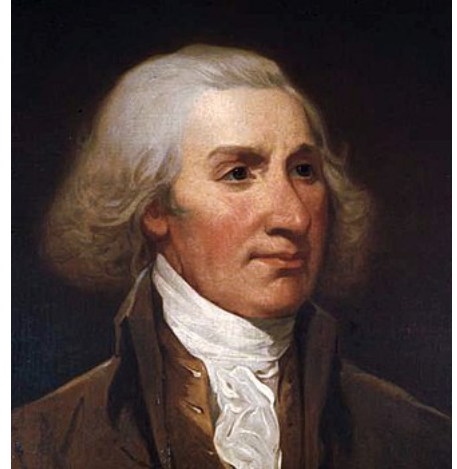
In popular culture

References

Additional reading

External links

Philip Schuyler



United States Senator from New York

In office

March 4, 1797 – January 3, 1798

Preceded by Aaron Burr

Succeeded by John Sloss Hobart

In office

July 16, 1789 – March 3, 1791

Preceded by *Office established*

Succeeded by Aaron Burr

1st Surveyor General of New York

In office

March 30, 1781 – May 13, 1784

Preceded by *Office established*

Succeeded by Simeon De Witt

Personal details

Born Philip Schuyler
November 20, 1733
Albany, Province of New York, British America

Died November 18, 1804 (aged 70)
Schuyler Mansion,

Early life

Philip John Schuyler was born on November 20 [O.S. November 9] 1733^[3] in Albany, New York, to Cornelia Van Cortlandt (1698–1762) and Johannes ("John") Schuyler Jr. (1697–1741), the third generation of the Dutch Schuyler family in America. His maternal grandfather was Stephanus Van Cortlandt, the 17th Mayor of New York City.^[4]

Before his father died on the eve of his eighth birthday, Schuyler attended the public school in Albany.^[5] Afterward, he was educated by tutors at the Van Cortlandt family estate at New Rochelle. Fluent in both Dutch and English from childhood,^[6] in 1748 he began to study with Reverend Peter Stroupe at the New Rochelle French Protestant Church, where he learned French and mathematics.^[5] While he was at New Rochelle he also joined numerous trade expeditions where he met Iroquois leaders and learned to speak Mohawk.^[6]

Schuyler joined the British forces in 1755 during the French and Indian War, raised a provincial company, and was commissioned as its captain by his cousin, Lieutenant Governor James Delancey.^[5] In 1756, he accompanied British officer Colonel John Bradstreet to Oswego, where he gained experience as a quartermaster, which ended when the outpost fell to the French.^[5] Schuyler took part in the battles of Lake George, Oswego River, Carillon and Fort Frontenac.^[5]

After the war, Bradstreet sent Schuyler to England to settle Bradstreet's reimbursement claims for expenses he incurred during the war effort, and he remained in England from 1760 to 1763.^[7] After returning to the United States he took over management of several farms and business enterprises in upstate New York, including a lumber venture in Saratoga.^[8] In addition, Schuyler was responsible for constructing the first flax mill in the American colonies.^[9] Schulyer became colonel and commander of a militia district regiment in 1767.^[10] In 1768, he served as a member of the New York Assembly.^[11]

American Revolution

Schuyler was elected to the Continental Congress in 1775, and served until he was appointed a major general of the Continental Army in June. General Schuyler took command of the Northern Department, and planned the Invasion of Quebec (1775). His poor health required him to place Richard Montgomery in command of the invasion.^[12] In 1777, he again served in the Continental Congress.

	<u>Albany, New York, U.S.</u>
Resting place	<u>Albany Rural Cemetery</u> ^[1]
Political party	<u>Pro-Administration, Federalist</u>
Spouse(s)	<u>Catherine Van Rensselaer</u> (m.: 1755; died 1803)
Children	<u>Angelica</u> · <u>Elizabeth</u> · <u>Peggy</u> · <u>John</u> · <u>Philip</u> · <u>Rensselaer</u> · <u>Cornelia</u> · <u>Catherine</u>
Parent(s)	<u>Johannes Schuyler, Jr.</u> <u>Cornelia van Cortlandt</u>
Relatives	See <u>Schuyler family</u>
Profession	<u>Soldier, Statesman</u>
	Military service
Allegiance	<u>Province of New York</u> <u>United States</u>
Branch/service	<u>New York Provincial Troops</u> <u>New York Colonial Militia</u> <u>Continental Army</u>
Rank	<u>Captain (NY)</u> <u>Colonel (NY)</u> <u>Major General (USA)</u>
Battles/wars	<u>French and Indian War</u> <u>Revolutionary War</u> <ul style="list-style-type: none"><u>Battle of Saratoga</u>

Saratoga campaign

After returning to command of the Northern Department in 1777, Schuyler was active in preparing a defense against the Saratoga Campaign, part of the "Three Pronged Attack" strategy of the British to cut the American Colonies in two by invading and occupying New York State. In the summer of 1777, John Burgoyne marched his British force south from Quebec and through the valleys of Lakes Champlain and George. On the way he invested the small Colonial garrison occupying Fort Ticonderoga at the nexus of the two lakes. When General St. Clair abandoned Fort Ticonderoga in July, the Congress replaced Schuyler with General Horatio Gates, who had accused Schuyler of dereliction of duty. In 1778, Schuyler and Arthur St. Clair faced a court of inquiry over the loss of Ticonderoga, and both were acquitted.^{[13][14]}

The British offensive was eventually stopped by Continental Army then under the command of Gates and Benedict Arnold in the Battle of Saratoga. That victory, the first wholesale defeat of a large British force, marked a turning point in the revolution, for it convinced France to enter the war on the American side. When Schuyler demanded a court martial to answer Gates' charges, he was vindicated but resigned from the Army on April 19, 1779. He then served in two more sessions of the Continental Congress in 1779 and 1780.

Later career

As a prominent politician and Patriot leader in New York, Schuyler was the subject of an unsuccessful kidnapping attempt, which was plotted and led by John Walden Meyers on August 7, 1781. Schuyler was able to vacate his Albany mansion before the kidnappers arrived.^[15] Schuyler was an original member of the New York Society of the Cincinnati.

After the war, he expanded his Saratoga estate to tens of thousands of acres, adding slaves, tenant farmers, a store, mills for flour, flax, and lumber. He built several schooners on the Hudson River, and named the first *Saratoga*. According to the Schuyler Mansion Historic Society, there were around 40 slaves between the Albany and Saratoga estates.^[16]

He was a member of the New York State Senate from 1780 to 1784, and at the same time New York State Surveyor General from 1781 to 1784.^[17] Afterwards he returned to the State Senate from 1786 to 1790, where he actively supported the adoption of the United States Constitution.^[18]

In 1789, he was elected a U.S. Senator from New York to the First United States Congress, serving from July 27, 1789, to March 3, 1791. After losing his bid for re-election in 1791 to Aaron Burr, he returned to the State Senate from 1792 to 1797. In 1797, he was selected again to the U.S. Senate and served in the 5th United States Congress from March 4, 1797, until his resignation because of ill health on January 3, 1798.^[19]

Personal life

According to the Schuyler Family's Bible, on September 7, 1755, he married Catherine Van Rensselaer (1734–1803) at Albany. In the Bible entry, he was called "Philip Johannes Schuyler" and she was called "Catherina Van Rensselaer". She was the daughter of Johannes Van Rensselaer (1707/08–1783) and his first wife, Engeltje Livingston (1698–1746/47). Johannes was the grandson of Hendrick van Rensselaer (1667–1740). Engeltje was the daughter of Robert Livingston the Younger. Philip and Catherine had 15 children together, eight of whom survived to adulthood, including:

- Angelica Schuyler (1756–1814), who married John Barker Church (1748–1818), later a British MP.
- Elizabeth Schuyler (1757–1854), who married Alexander Hamilton (1755/7–1804), later the first United States Secretary of the Treasury. Elizabeth co-founded the first private orphanage in New York City.^[20]
- Margarita "Peggy" Schuyler (1758–1801), who married Stephen Van Rensselaer III (1764–1839), 8th Patroon.
- Cornelia Schuyler (1761–1762), a twin to the first John Bradstreet.
- John Bradstreet Schuyler (1761–1761), a twin to Cornelia.^{[21][22]}
- John Bradstreet Schuyler (1763–1764).
- John Bradstreet Schuyler (1765–1795), who married Elizabeth Van Rensselaer (1768–1841), the sister of Stephen Van Rensselaer III who married his sister Peggy.^[23]
- Philip Jeremiah Schuyler (1768–1835), who served in the U.S. House of Representatives and who married Sarah Rutsen; after her death in 1805, he married Mary Anna Sawyer.
- Triplets (1770–1770, Unbaptized).^[24]
- Rensselaer Schuyler (1773–1847), who married Elizabeth Ten Broeck, daughter of General Abraham Ten Broeck.^[25]
- Cornelia Schuyler (1776–1808), who married Washington Morton.^[26]
- Cortlandt Schuyler (1778–1778).^[27]
- Catherine Van Rensselaer Schuyler (1781–1857), who married first, Samuel Malcolm (son of William Malcolm), and then James Cochran (1769–1848), her cousin and the son of John Cochran and Gertrude Schuyler, Philip Schuyler's sister.^[28]



Schuyler's wife, Catherine Van Rensselaer, by Walter Robinson, c. 1795.

Schuyler's country home had been destroyed by General John Burgoyne's forces in October 1777. Later that year, he began rebuilding on the same site, now located in southern Schuylerville, New York. This later home is maintained by the National Park Service as part of the Saratoga National Historical Park, and is open to the public.

Schuyler died at the Schuyler Mansion in Albany on November 18, 1804, four months after his son-in-law, Alexander Hamilton, was killed in a duel and 2 days before his 71st birthday. He is buried at Albany Rural Cemetery in Menands, New York.



Schuyler Mansion, which was constructed from 1761 to 1765 during the Revolution, in Schuylerville

Legacy

Place names

Geographic locations and buildings named in Schuyler's honor include:

- Schuyler, New York
- Schuylerville, New York
- Schuyler County, New York, as well as Schuyler County, Illinois, and Schuyler County, Missouri
- Fort Schuyler, a military fortification begun in 1833 at the tip of Throggs Neck in the Bronx, which now houses the Maritime Industry Museum and the State University of New York Maritime College
- The Philip Schuyler Achievement Academy (named for Schuyler and his son Philip) in Albany, New York (name change expected in 2021)^[29]



Statue outside Albany City Hall

Works of art

Schuyler was depicted by John Trumbull in his 1821 painting *Surrender of General Burgoyne*, which hangs in the United States Capitol rotunda in Washington, D.C.

Major General Philip Schuyler, a bronze statue by sculptor J. Massey Rhind, was erected outside Albany City Hall in 1925. In June 2020, Albany mayor Kathy Sheehan signed an executive order for the statue to be removed and given to a "museum or other institution for future display with appropriate historical context", due to Schuyler's ownership of slaves.^[30] The statue was requested the next day by the mayor of Schuylerville, New York, who suggested that it be relocated to Schuyler House.^[31]

In popular culture

The non-speaking role of Philip Schuyler was originated by ensemble member Sydney James Harcourt in the 2015 Broadway musical *Hamilton*, in which Schuyler's son-in-law Alexander Hamilton is the title character.^[32]

References

Specific

- Column atop a large base. Sec. 29, lot 2, Albany Rural Cemetery, Menands, Albany, NY., Wilson, Scott. *Resting Places: The Burial Sites of More Than 14,000 Famous Persons*, 3d ed.: 2 (Kindle Location 42147). McFarland & Company, Inc., Publishers. Kindle Edition.
- NYSM: Philip Schuyler (<http://www.nysm.nysed.gov/albany/bios/s/phschuyler1750.html>)
- Gerlach, Don R. (1964). *Philip Schuyler and the American Revolution in New York, 1733–1777* (<https://books.google.com/books?id=wi6CAAAAIAAJ&q=%22old+style%22>). Lincoln, NE: University of Nebraska Press. p. 17.
- Tuckerman 1969, p. 9.
- "Biography, Philip John Schuyler (1733–1804)" (<https://www.albany.edu/arce/Schuyler4.html>). *ARCE: Albany Rural Cemetery Explorer*. Albany, NY: University at Albany SUNY and Albany Rural Cemetery. 2019. Retrieved 2020-06-08.
- Howard, Hugh (2012). *Houses of the Founding Fathers* (<https://books.google.com/books?id=TcetCkeHCqgC&pg=PA160>). New York, NY: Artisan. p. 160. ISBN 978-1-5796-5510-5 – via Google Books.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 65–66.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 70–71.
- Lossing, Benson John (February 2009). *The Life and Times of Philip Schuyler* (<https://books.google.com/books?id=54GlvGkTHgYC&pg=PA320>). Applewood Books. p. 219. ISBN 9781429016827. Retrieved 2018-02-26.
- Lossing 2009, p. 218.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 79–80.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 112–114.
- Lossing, p. 320.
- "Major General Arthur St. Clair" (<https://armyhistory.org/major-general-arthur-st-clair/>). National Museum of the United States Army. January 27, 2015.
- McBurney, Christian M. (January 16, 2015). "THE PLOT TO KIDNAP SCHUYLER" (<https://allthingsliberty.com/2014/01/plot-kidnap-schuyler/>). *Journal of the American Revolution*. Archived (<https://web.archive.org/web/20200424005001/https://allthingsliberty.com/2014/01/plot-kidnap-schuyler/>) from the original on 2020-04-24. Retrieved 2020-05-16.
- Mansion, Schuyler (2016-06-05). "Schuyler Mansion State Historic Site: An Overview of Slave Trade in New Netherland, New York and Schuyler Mansion" (<http://schuylermansion.blogspot.com/2016/06/an-overview-of-slave-trade-in-new.html>). *Schuyler Mansion State Historic Site*. Retrieved 2020-12-14.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 253–254.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 254–258.
- Tuckerman 1969, pp. 257–258.
- "Republican Court: Elizabeth Schuyler Hamilton (1757–1854)" (http://www.librarycompany.org/women/republicancourt/hamilton_elizabeth.htm). *www.librarycompany.org*. Retrieved 2015-09-30.
- Schuyler Family Bible, Collections of Schuyler Mansion State Historic Site, Albany, NY.

22. Eliza Hamilton *The Extraordinary Life and Times of the Wife of Alexander Hamilton* by Tilar J. Mazzeo
23. Schuyler, George W. (1885). *Colonial New York: Philip Schuyler and His Family, Volume 2* (<http://archive.org/details/colonialnewyorkp02schu>). New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. pp. 282 (<http://archive.org/details/colonialnewyorkp02schu/page/282>).
24. Schuyler Family Bible, Collections of Schuyler Mansion State Historic Site, Albany, NY.
25. Bielinski, Stefan. "Rensselaer Schuyler" (<https://exhibitions.nysm.nysed.gov/albany/bios/s/renschuyler.html>). *New York State Museum*. Retrieved 2017-04-22.
26. "This Day in History: Cornelia Schuyler and Washington Morton are married!" (<https://www.facebook.com/notes/schuyler-mansion-state-historic-site/this-day-in-history-cornelia-schuyler-and-washington-morton-are-married/1156200911061451>). *Facebook: Schuyler Mansion State Historic Site*. October 7, 2015. Retrieved 2016-04-08.
27. "Philip Schuyler" (http://www.ancestry.com/genealogy/records/philip-schuyler_6454945). *Ancestry.com*. Retrieved 2016-04-08.
28. Schuyler, George W. (1885). *Colonial New York: Philip Schuyler and His Family, Volume 2* (<http://archive.org/details/colonialnewyorkp02schu>). New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. pp. 283 (<http://archive.org/details/colonialnewyorkp02schu/page/283>).
29. Williams, Michael (2020-06-19). "Slave-owner Gen. Philip Schuyler's name coming off Albany school" (<https://www.timesunion.com/news/article/Slave-owner-Philip-Schuyler-s-name-coming-off-15351746.php>). *Times Union*. Retrieved 2020-12-14.
30. Pitofsky, Marina (June 12, 2020). "Philip Schuyler statue to be removed from downtown Albany" (<https://thehill.com/blogs/blog-briefing-room/news/502445-philip-schuyler-statue-to-be-removed-from-downtown-albany>). *The Hill*. Retrieved 2020-06-12.
31. Mulholland, Mark (June 12, 2020). "Schuylerville wants statue Albany's mayor wants removed" (<https://wnyt.com/albany-new-york-news/philip-schuyler-statue-albany-city-hall-schuylerville/5758742/>). *WNYT-TV*. Albany, NY. Archived (<https://web.archive.org/web/20200613212038/https://wnyt.com/albany-new-york-news/philip-schuyler-statue-albany-city-hall-schuylerville/5758742/>) from the original on 2020-06-13.
32. "Sydney James Harcourt | Playbill" (<http://www.playbill.com/person/sydney-james-harcourt-vault-000117613>). *Playbill*. Retrieved 2017-01-12.

Additional reading

- Barbagallo, Tricia (March 10, 2007). "Fellow Citizens Read a Horrid Tale" (http://web.archive.loc.gov/all/20090519202131/http://www.archives.nysed.gov/apt/magazine/archivesmag_sum07.pdf) (PDF). *New York Archives*. Archived from the original (http://www.archives.nysed.gov/apt/magazine/archivesmag_sum07.pdf) (PDF) on 2009-05-19. Retrieved 2008-06-04.
- *Revolutionary Enigma: A Re-Appraisal of General Philip Schuyler of New York* by Martin H. Bush; 1969; (ISBN 0-87198-080-0).
- Tuckerman, Bayard (1969) [1903]. *Life of General Philip Schuyler, 1733–1804*. ISBN 0-8369-5031-3.
- *Proud Patriot: Philip Schuyler and the War of Independence, 1775–1783* by Don Gerlach; 1987; Syracuse University Press; (ISBN 0-8156-2373-9).
- *The New York Civil List* compiled by Franklin Benjamin Hough (pages 37f; Weed, Parsons and Co., 1858) (<https://books.google.com/books?id=E3sFAAAQAAJ&pg=PA37>)
- *The Real George Washington* by the National Center for Constitutional Studies; 1991; 2009 reprint ISBN 0-88080-014-3

External links

- United States Congress. "Philip Schuyler (id: S000154)" (<http://bioguide.congress.gov/scripts/biodisplay.pl?index=S000154>). *Biographical Directory of the United States Congress*.
 - Co-Planner of the Sullivan-Clinton Campaign Against the Iroquois (<http://www.sullivanclinton.com>)
 - Collection of Letters from Philip Schuyler (<https://web.archive.org/web/20130429161811/http://www.familytales.org/results.php?tla=pjs>)
 - Philip Schuyler Achievement Academy (<https://web.archive.org/web/20110821020409/http://saa.albany.k12.ny.us/>)
 - Finding Aid to Schuyler Family Collection, 1679–1823 (<http://www.nysl.nysed.gov/msscfa/sc19811.htm>) at the [New York State Library](#)
-

Retrieved from "https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Philip_Schuyler&oldid=1085597730"

This page was last edited on 1 May 2022, at 11:04 (UTC).

Text is available under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike License 3.0; additional terms may apply. By using this site, you agree to the Terms of Use and Privacy Policy. Wikipedia® is a registered trademark of the Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., a non-profit organization.

Schuyler, Philip John



Views 2,776,085

Updated May 11 2018

Schuyler, Philip John

SCHUYLER, PHILIP JOHN. (1733–1804). Continental general. [New York \(/places/united-states-and-canada/us-political-geography/new-york\)](#). Scion of one of [New York \(/places/united-states-and-canada/us-political-geography/new-york\)](#)'s most ancient, honorable, and well-heeled Dutch families, Philip Schuyler was connected by marriage to just about all the others. Born in Albany, New York, 10 November 1733, Schuyler was commissioned as a captain at the beginning of the Seven Year's War, fought at [Lake George \(/places/united-states-and-canada/us-physical-geography/lake-george\)](#) on 8 September 1755, and almost immediately thereafter showed the military inclinations that were to characterize his Revolutionary War career—he became a logistician.

Even before 1755 Schuyler had had his first attack of rheumatic gout, a hereditary disease that troubled him throughout his life and that may well have inclined him toward army administration rather than field commands. After the action at [Lake George \(/places/united-states-and-canada/us-physical-geography/lake-george\)](#), he was detailed to escort the French prisoners of war ([/social-sciences-and-law/law/international-law/prisoners-war](#)) to Albany. Having handed over the prisoners, he married Catherine Van Rensselaer on 17 September, and then rejoined his unit. He established a military depot at Fort Edward, and the next spring served under Colonel John Bradstreet in carrying provisions to Oswego. Resigning his commission in 1757, he kept up his commissary interests and derived a substantial income from provisioning the army. In 1758 he returned to military service as deputy commissary with

the rank of major, taking part in the unsuccessful attack on Fort Ticonderoga and the capture of Fort Frontenac. During 1759–1760 he operated from Albany, provisioning General Jeffery Amherst's forces. Schuyler had become a close friend of Bradstreet, with whom he sailed to England in February 1761 to settle his accounts with the War Office. At the end of the last colonial war, he was therefore a man with rich experience in provisioning field forces.

Coincident with the Peace of Paris in 1763, Schuyler settled his father's estate, inheriting thousands of acres in the Mohawk and Hudson valleys. In addition he received from his uncle, Philip, the old Schuyler homestead near West Troy and, his favorite heritage, lands in the Saratoga patent (a territory measuring about six square miles along the [Hudson River](#) (</people/medicine/biochemistry-biographies/hudson-river>)). He became an efficient manager of these lands and a happy family man.

Elected to the state assembly in 1768, Schuyler proved to be an ardent Patriot but an opponent of the radical [Sons of Liberty](#) (</history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/sons-liberty>) and other advocates of mob action. Because he was a commissioner in the boundary dispute with Massachusetts and [New Hampshire](#) (</places/united-states-and-canada/us-political-geography/new-hampshire>) over the region that later became Vermont (which always found in favor of the large New York landowners), many of his fellow New Englanders came to distrust Schuyler as a self-interested elitist. When the [Continental Congress](#) (</history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/continental-congress>) started naming generals, one of the top ones had to be from New York, and on 15 June 1775 Schuyler became a major general and commander of the Northern Department. Of Commander in Chief [George Washington](#) (</people/history/us-history-biographies/george-washington>)'s generals, only Artemas Ward and [Charles Lee](#) (</people/history/us-history-biographies/charles-lee>) ranked above Schuyler.

In preparing for the invasion of Canada, this austere Dutch patrician showed his good and bad qualities as a senior commander. Knowing the importance of logistics, he was slow getting started, and he had only the half-hearted support of the New Englanders at the outset. He further alienated these republicans by his personal manner and by his insistence on discipline. When he finally took the field to lead his troops down [Lake Champlain](#) (</places/united-states-and-canada/us-physical-geography/lake-champlain>) into Canada, he almost immediately was prostrated by rheumatic gout. General [Richard Montgomery](#) (</people/history/us-history->

[biographies/richard-montgomery](#)) took command of the field army, and Schuyler directed the forwarding of supplies from Albany. He also negotiated the neutrality of the Indians who comprised the Six Nations, an important requisite to the invasion of Canada.

The events leading to Schuyler's downfall at the hands of Congress started on 9 January 1777, when the delegates voted to dismiss Dr. Samuel Stringer, who served as the director of hospitals in the Northern Department. Schuyler vehemently protested this interference in his command. Congress reprimanded Schuyler in an insulting fashion and ordered [Horatio Gates](#) ([/people/history/us-history-biographies/horatio-gates](#)) north to take over as commander of the American forces then (March 1777) at Ticonderoga. Schuyler visited Washington's headquarters early in April to protest this action, and then went to Philadelphia, where he won the first round of this dispute with Congress. As a result, that body clarified Gates's status as subordinate to Schuyler. Given the alternative of accepting this position or resuming his post of adjutant general, Gates left the Northern Department and rushed to Congress to lodge his own complaint.

Schuyler returned to find his army weak and demoralized. Except for his indecisiveness in connection with the defense of Ticonderoga, Schuyler's generalship in the initial stages of General [John Burgoyne](#) ([/people/history/british-and-irish-history-biographies/john-burgoyne](#))'s offensive was sound. After abandoning Ticonderoga to the British, Schuyler sent [Benedict Arnold](#) ([/people/history/us-history-biographies/benedict-arnold](#)) to lift the siege of Fort Stanwix, acted with intelligence to slow down Burgoyne's advance, and frantically attempted to raise troops to confront the British. But the loss of Ticonderoga was enough to rally his enemies in Congress. On 4 August 1777 the delegates ordered Gates to relieve Schuyler. It was more than a year before Schuyler had the satisfaction of being acquitted by a court-martial (in October 1778) of charges of incompetence. On 19 April 1779 he resigned his commission.

Although he left the army under humiliating circumstances, Schuyler continued to serve the American cause. He remained on the Board of Commissioners for Indian Affairs and performed valuable service in reducing the ravages of the border warfare along the Iroquois frontier. In 1779 he advised Washington on the campaign by Generals John Sullivan and George Clinton against the Iroquois. The British thought highly enough of his work at negating their Indian alliances that they made three attempts at kidnapping Schuyler.

Having already served in the Second [Continental Congress \(/history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/continental-congress\)](/history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/continental-congress) (1775) and again in 1777, Schuyler returned as a delegate from New York in 1779–1780. Near the end of this service, he prepared a report on depreciated currency and the issue of new bills of credit that was adopted with only slight modifications. From 13 April until 11 August 1780 he was chairman of a committee at Washington's headquarters, assisting the latter in reorganizing the army's staff departments and working out a scheme for effective cooperation with the French expeditionary forces. From 1780 until 1798 he held public office continuously at the state and federal level, highlighted by two short terms in the first U.S. Senate (1789–1791, 1797–1798). As an adherent of a strong central government, Schuyler supported the federal Constitution as well as New York's abandonment of its claims to Vermont. During his many terms in the state senate, he firmly advocated internal improvements that would enhance New York's commercial development, serving as the president of the state's canal company from 1792 until his death on 18 November 1804.

SEE ALSO [Burgoyne's Offensive \(/history/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/burgoyne-offensive\)](/history/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/burgoyne-offensive); [Canada Invasion \(/history/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/canada-invasion\)](/history/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/canada-invasion); [Gates, Horatio \(/history/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/gates-horatio-0\)](/history/encyclopedias-almanacs-transcripts-and-maps/gates-horatio-0).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Bush, Martin A. *Revolutionary Enigma: A Reappraisal of General Philip Schuyler of New York*. Port Washington, N.Y.: I. J. Friedman, 1967.

Gerlach, Don R. *Philip Schuyler and the American Revolution (/history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/american-revolution) in New York, 1733–1777*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1964.

———. *Proud Patriot: Philip Schuyler and the War of Independence* ([/history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/war-independence](#)), 1775–1783. Syracuse, N.Y.: Syracuse University Press, 1987.

Tuckerman, Bayard. *Life of General Philip Schuyler, 1733–1804*. Freeport, N.Y.: Books for Libraries Press, 1969.

revised by Michael Bellesiles

Encyclopedia of the American Revolution: Library of Military History

Philip John Schuyler



Views 2,238,028

Updated Jun 11 2018

Philip John Schuyler

The American Revolutionary War general Philip John Schuyler (1733-1804) was a leader in the political and commercial life of his state and nation.

Philip Schuyler was born in Albany, N. Y., on Nov. 11, 1733, into an old, aristocratic Dutch family, one of the colony's largest landholders. He received an excellent education. After commanding a company of [New York](#) ([/places/united-states-and-canada/us-political-geography/new-york](#)) militia in the French and Indian War, he managed the large estate left him by his father in the Mohawk and [Hudson River](#) ([/people/medicine/biochemistry-biographies/hudson-river](#)) valleys.

At the same time, Schuyler was active in supporting the colonial cause in the controversy with [Great Britain](#) ([/places/britain-ireland-france-and-low-countries/british-and-irish-political-geography/great-britain](#)). He argued the colonial position in the provincial Assembly in 1768 and went to the Second [Continental Congress](#) ([/history/united-states-and-canada/us-history/continental-congress](#)) in May 1775 as delegate from [New York](#) ([/places/united-states-and-canada/us-political-geography/new-york](#)). There he served with [George Washington](#) ([/people/history/us-history-biographies/george-washington](#)) on a committee to make rules and regulations for the army. In June 1775, shortly after the Revolution began, Congress appointed him a major general, one of four to serve under Washington.

Schuyler's assignment was to command the Northern Department (consisting of New York) and to prepare an attack on Canada. After raising and supplying an army and strengthening Ticonderoga and Crown Point on the route north, he was forced by ill health to turn over command of the troops to Gen. [Richard Montgomery](#) ([/people/history/us-history-biographies/richard-montgomery](#)). The attack failed, and Schuyler was given much of the blame. He had, actually, delayed too long in ordering the army to get under way and had been

too slow and deliberate in executing his plan, but the true cause of the defeat lay in factors beyond his control. He also made some bad decisions during the course of the campaign of British general [John Burgoyne](/people/history/british-and-irish-history-biographies/john-burgoyne) in northern New York in 1777; one of these contributed to the loss of Ft. Ticonderoga, an American stronghold. Accusations of incompetence were leveled against him, along with a rumor of intrigue with the enemy. In 1778 Schuyler demanded a court-martial to air the charges. He was acquitted that October but felt it best to resign his commission.

After leaving the army, Schuyler was active in politics, holding office continually until 1798, when illness forced his permanent retirement. He served as state senator for 13 years and for 3 years as U.S. senator from New York under the new Federal Constitution, in whose creation he had played a leading role with his son-in-law, [Alexander Hamilton](/people/history/us-history-biographies/alexander-hamilton). Schuyler died in Albany on Nov. 18, 1804.

Further Reading

The best biography of Schuyler is Benson J. Lossing, *The Life and Times of Philip Schuyler* (2 vols., 1872-1873). Bayard Tuckerman, *Life of General Philip Schuyler* (1903), is good for Schuyler's military phase. For special aspects of Schuyler's life see George W. Schuyler, *Colonial New York: Philip Schuyler and His Family* (2 vols., 1885), and Don R. Gerlach, *Philip Schuyler and the American Revolution in New York, 1733-1777* (1964).

Additional Sources

Taormina, Francis R., *Philip Schuyler: who he was, what he did*, Schenectady, N.Y.: F.R. Taormina, 1992. □

Encyclopedia of World Biography

Reproduced for educational purposes only. Fair Use relied upon.

Founders Online

FROM GEORGE WASHINGTON TO MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER, 18 DECEMBER 1778

To Major General Philip Schuyler

HEAD QUARTERS MIDDLE BROOK [N.Y.]

Dear Sir,

Decemr 18 1778

I beg you will accept my thanks, for your obliging letter of the 30th Ulto and the polite expressions of your friendship which accompany it. At the same time, I am happy to congratulate you on your honorable acquital with the approbation of Congress.¹

The information and remarks, you have favoured me with are very full and satisfactory; and I must request as you are good enough to promise, that you will continue your reflections and enquiries, on the subject and communicate, from time to time, the result.

The difference of circumstances, which you have enumerated, between the time of General Amhersts operations and the present is certainly very striking and the difficulties, of an expedition into Canada by the route he took—as things are now situated, great and many. The more however I consider the subject and examine into the state of our resources—the more I am convinced that, if an expedition is carried into that country, in the course of the next Campaign it must of necessity be done through that channel. The advan<tage> of penetrating by Lake Champlain, make the practicability of doing it infinitely desireable but upon the whole, I still am of opinion, that the prospect of effecting it is too small and precarious to warrant the attempt. I could hardly rely upon the success of any expedient th<at> might be adopted to gain the superiority of the Lake in the Summer—and I have greater reason than when I had the pleasure of writing you the 20th Ulto, to believe, that an undertaking for that purpose this Winter is intirely out of our power. My earnest desire of a Winter expedition has led me closely to investigate our means of prosecuting it, and I find after the fullest examination, from the concurrent and definitive reports of the Quarter Master and Commissary General, that our resources are unequal to the preparations necessary for such an enterprise.

How far it will be in our power to extend our operations into Canada the next campaign must depend on a variety of events which cannot now be foreseen with certainty. It is to be lamented too, that our prospects are not so favourable as we could wish—But I agree with you in the importance of reducing Niagara at least if practicable; and I think it prudent to be taking preparatory measures, to enable us to attempt this and as much more, as the future situation of our affairs and resources may permit. I am the more induced to this, as the emancipation of Canada is an object, which Congress have much at heart.

Conformable to this principle I have directed the Commissary General to lay in as large magazines of flour and salt provisions &c. at Albany and any other places which may be thought proper, as he possibly can; and in like manner I have instructed the Quarter Master General to provide all the materials requisite for building, vessels, together with forage and every other article, which comes under the direction of his departmant. A copy of my instructions to him is inclosed.²

You will perceive I have referred the Quarter Master General to you for advice and directions in making his arrangements. I have done the same with respect to the Commissary. Every consideration induces me to wish and request your assistance in this business—No person I know, has it more in his power to judge of the measures proper to be taken; and I am persuaded you will readily afford your aid in a matter of so great importance, as far as maybe consistent with the situation of your public and personal concerns.

In forming the magazines, I wish regard to be had as far as the primary intention will permit, to an easy transfer and appropriation of them, to the use of the army in this quarter, lest our operations to the Northward should be disappointed, and the scence of action still continue in our present front. As a large supply of hard bread will be essential, you will, please

among other things to direct the Commissary, to provide such a quantity of this article as you deem sufficient. The most speedy and complete repair possible of the arms in the hands of Mr Renselaar, will require immediate attention.

Though we cannot now Determine what will be the extent of our Northern plan, nor, consequently, what number of troops will really be employed; yet as it is necessary to fix some precise idea on this point, by which to regulate our preparations, you will adapt them to an army of at least ten thousand *effective* rank and file, with a proportion of Artillery men attendants and retainers of every kind, according to the nature of the expedition.

On account of the difficulty you suggest on transporting the vessels from the place mentioned in my last, my present intention is to have the iron work rigging sails &c. prepared at Albany, and the Vessels built at Oswego, agreeable to the plan you propose unless upon a more full considn of the matter you shall think the former plan of building on Hudsons River can be executed in the whole or part with more ease than at first view.³ It will be of the greatest moment however to employ every artifice to cover the real design, and beget false expectations in the enemy. I leave this to your management.

You will observe, by my instructions, to the Qr Mr Gl, that I have not absolutely decided on the kind of Vessels to be constructed. I wish first to take the opinions of some persons of experience in maritime affairs, before I finally determine. With respect to the batteaus, I leave the construction of them wholly to your judgment, and you will give every direction accordingly.

I shall be under a particular obligation for the journals you mention, if you are fortunate enough to find them.

Before I conclude, There is one or two things in particular, which I must beg you will endeavour to ascertain—Whether, there is not another River below la famine which empties into the St Lawrence, and what kind of a River it is? I have an idea of one which enters as low as Oswegatchie. Also where the enemy's vessels on Lake Ontario are stationed during the Winter, and how they are defended and secured in the frozen state of the Lake?

It is not unlikely, I may be at Albany in the Month of January—This in the meantime, I mean only to be known to you; but I must insist, that you will not suffer it to make the least alteration, in your private plans. I am with the truest esteem and regard Dr Sir Yr Obedt hume ser.⁴

Df, in Alexander Hamilton's writing, DLC:GW; copy (extract), DNA:PCC, item 166; copy (extract), DNA:PCC, item 169; Varick transcript, DLC:GW.

1. On 3 Dec., Congress confirmed the verdict of a court-martial that had acquitted Schuyler of neglect in the loss of Forts Ticonderoga and Independence in July 1777 (JCC, 12:1186).
2. See GW's letters of 15 Dec. to Nathanael Greene and Jeremiah Wadsworth.
3. GW wrote "unless upon a more full considn of the matter you shall think the former plan" and "can be executed in the whole or part with more ease than at first view."
4. Hamilton began a postscript, writing "N.B. I," but never completed it.

Note: The annotations to this document, and any other modern editorial content, are copyright © The Rector and Visitors of the University of Virginia. All rights reserved.

Back to top

SOURCE PROJECT	Washington Papers
TITLE	From George Washington to Major General Philip Schuyler, 18 December 1778
AUTHOR	Washington, George
RECIPIENT	Schuyler, Philip
DATE	18 December 1778
CITE AS	"From George Washington to Major General Philip Schuyler, 18 December 1778," <i>Founders Online</i> , National Archives, <a 38="" 440="" 965="" 980"="" data-label="Page-Footer" href="https://founders.archives.gov/documents/Washington/03-</td> </tr> </table> </div> <div data-bbox="> <p>https://founders.archives.gov/documents/Washington/03-18-02-0517</p>

18-02-0517. [Original source: *The Papers of George Washington*, Revolutionary War Series, vol. 18, 1 November 1778–14 January 1779, ed. Edward G. Lengel. Charlottesville: University of Virginia Press, 2008, pp. 456–458.]

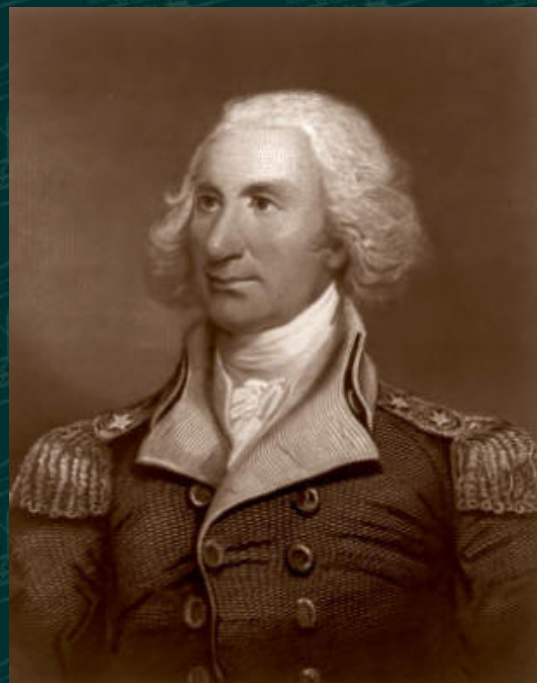
The National Historical Publications and Records Commission (NHPRC) is part of the National Archives. Through its grants program, the NHPRC supports a wide range of activities to preserve, publish, and encourage the use of documentary sources, relating to the history of the United States, and research and development projects to bring historical records to the public.

Founders Online is an official website of the U.S. government, administered by the National Archives and Records Administration through the NHPRC, in partnership with the University of Virginia Press, which is hosting this website.

General Philip Schuyler



Schuyler, PHILIP (JOHN), military officer; born in Albany, [New York](#), November 22, 1733; inherited the whole of his father's estate, which he divided with his brothers and sisters, and also inherited from Colonel Philip Schuyler the Saratoga estate, which he afterwards occupied. He was a captain of provincial troops at Fort Edward and Lake George in 1755, became a commissary in the army the same year, and held the office until 1763. In 1756 Colonel John Bradstreet was sent by Shirley to provision the garrison at Oswego. With 200 provincial troops and forty companies of boatmen, he crossed the country from Albany, by way of the Mohawk River, Wood Creek, Oneida Lake, and the Oswego River, and placed in the fort provision for 5,000 troops for six months. He was accompanied by Schuyler, as chief commissary. His descent of the Oswego River had been observed by the



French scouts, and when he had ascended that stream about 9 miles he was attacked by a strong party of French, Canadians, and Indians. These were driven from an island in the river, and there Bradstreet made a defensive stand. One of the Canadians, too severely wounded to fly with his companions, remained, and a boatman was about to dispatch him, when Schuyler saved his life. When, soon afterwards, Bradstreet abandoned the island, only one bateau was left. It was scarcely large enough to carry the colonel and his little band of followers. The wounded Canadian begged to be taken in, but was refused. "Then throw me into the river," he cried, "and not leave me here to perish with hunger and thirst." The heart of Schuyler was touched by the poor fellow's appeals, and, handing his weapons and coat to a companion-in-arms, he bore the wounded man to the water, swam with him across the deep channel, and placed him in the hands of a surgeon. The soldier survived; and nineteen years afterwards, when Schuyler, at the head of the Northern Army of the Revolution, sent a proclamation in the French language into Canada, that soldier, living near Chambly, enlisted under the banner of [Ethan Allen](#), that he might see and thank the preserver of his life. He went to Schuyler's tent, on the Isle aux Noix, and kissed the general's hand in token of his gratitude.

Canadian Campaign

An influential member of the New York Assembly, Schuyler was chiefly instrumental in stimulating early resistance to British encroachments on the rights of the colonists. In the [Continental Congress](#), in 1775, he, with [Washington](#), drew up the regulations for the army, and he was appointed one of the first major-generals. Assigned to the command of the Northern Army, he was charged with planning and executing an invasion of Canada. An attack of gout prevented his conducting the campaign in person in the field, and after going with the army to the foot of [Lake Champlain](#), he relinquished the command to [GENERAL RICHARD MONTGOMERY](#), his lieutenant, and returned to Albany. He, however, addressed the inhabitants of Canada in a circular letter, written in

This Site:

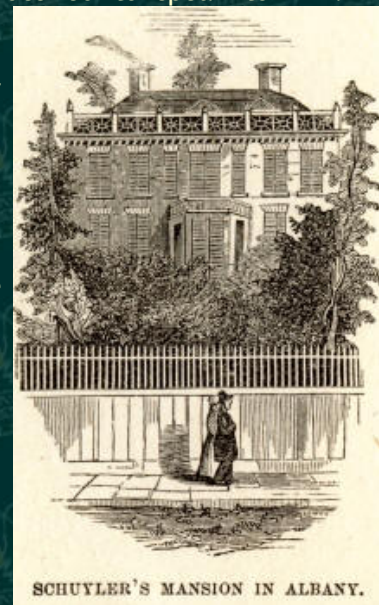
[Discovery of America](#)
[The Explorers](#)
[Post Columbian Exploration](#)
[Thirteen Original Colonies](#)
[Colonization of America](#)
[Colonial Life](#)
[Colonial Days and Ways](#)
[Independence Movement](#)
[The Patriots](#)
[Prelude to War](#)
[Revolutionary War](#)
[Revolutionary War Battles](#)
[Overview of Revolutionary War](#)
[Revolutionary War Timeline](#)

Republic of Texas
Indians

and sacredly to guard their property." The wise purposes of this circular were frustrated by the bigotry of General Wooster, who saw no good in Roman Catholics, and the dishonesty of Colonel [Arnold](#), who cheated them.

On his recovery from his attack of gout he entered with zeal upon his various duties as commander-in-chief of his department and principal Indian commissioner. Annoyed by the insubordination and loose discipline of some of his troops –with interference with his authority and wicked slanders of men intriguing to put [General Gates](#) in his place—he offered his resignation; but the Congress, knowing his great worth, begged him to remain. General Gates, piqued by the omission of the Continental Congress to appoint him one of the major-generals in the army (June, 1775), but only adjutant-general, with rank of brigadier-general, indulged in unworthy intrigues for promotion. He was a favorite with some of the leading men in Congress from [New England](#), and very soon a Gates faction appeared in that body. When disaster overwhelmed the American army in Canada he was sent thither, by order of Congress, to take command of it, and, because his power was independent while the troops were in Canada, he assumed that his command would be independent in any part of the Northern Department. When the troops were out of Canada he assumed that independence. Schuyler questioned his powers, and Congress was compelled to tell Gates that he was subordinate to Schuyler. Late in 1776 Gates repaired to the Congress at [Baltimore](#) and renewed his intrigues so successfully that, on account of false charges against Schuyler, he was appointed his successor in the command of the Northern Department in the spring of 1777. The report of a committee of inquiry caused Schuyler's reinstatement a few weeks afterwards. Gates was angry, and wrote impertinent letters to his superiors. He refused to serve under Schuyler, who had always treated him with the most generous courtesy, but hastened to the Congress, then in Philadelphia, and, by the misrepresentation of one of his faction, was admitted to the floor of that body, where he so conducted himself as to receive rebuke. A conspiracy for the removal of Schuyler and the appointment of Gates in his place soon ripened into action. The evacuation of [Ticonderoga](#) early in July (1777) was charged to Schuyler's inefficiency, and he was even charged, indirectly, with treason. So great became the clamor against him, especially from the constituents of Gates's friends in Congress from New England, that early in August those friends procured Schuyler's removal and the appointment of Gates to his place. The patriotic Schuyler, unmoved in his sense of duty by this rank injustice, received Gates kindly and offered his services to the new commander, who treated the general with the greatest coolness. The victories over [Burgoyne](#) soon ensued, the whole preparation for which had been made by Schuyler. Left thus without command, Schuyler's vigilance was of the utmost importance to the cause, and he was called "the eye of the Northern Department." His influence in keeping the Indians neutral was of incalculable importance to the American cause at that time. Schuyler resigned his commission in April, 1779. As a member of Congress (1778-81) he was very efficient in military affairs, and was appointed to confer with Washington concerning the campaign of 1780, especially in the Southern Department.

table. Meyer, at the head of a band of Tories, Canadians, and Indians, repaired to the neighborhood of Albany, where he seized a Dutch laborer and learned from him the precise condition of affairs at Schuyler's house. He was allowed to depart after taking an oath of secrecy, but, with a mental reservation, he warned the general, and Schuyler and his family were on the alert. Just at twilight of a sultry evening, a servant told the general that a stranger at the back gate desired to speak to him. He comprehended the errand. The doors of the house were immediately closed and barred, the family went to the second story, and the general hastened to his room for his firearms. From the window he perceived that the house was surrounded by armed men. They were Meyer and his gang. To arouse his guard (three of whom were asleep on the grass), and, perchance, to alarm the town, he fired a pistol from his window. At the same moment Indians burst open the doors below. All these movements occurred in the space of a few minutes. Mrs. Schuyler perceived that in the confusion in going upstairs she had left her infant (afterwards Mrs. C. V. R. Cochrane, of Oswego, N. Y., where she died in August, 1857) in the cradle below. She was about to rush to the rescue of her child, when the general restrained her. Her life was of more value than that of the infant. Her little daughter Margaret (afterwards the wife of Gen. Stephen Van Rensselaer, the "patroon") ran down the stairs, snatched the baby from the cradle, and bore it up in safety. As she was ascending an Indian threw a tomahawk at her. It went near the baby's head, through her dress, and stuck in the stair-railing. At the same moment one of the miscreants, supposing her to be a servant, called out, "Wench! wench! where is your master?" With quick presence of mind, she replied, "Gone to alarm the town." The Tories were then in the dining-room, engaged in plunder. The general threw up his window and called out, loudly, as to a multitude, "Come on, my brave fellows; surround the house and secure the villains who are plundering." The marauders retreated in haste, carrying away with them a quantity of silver-plate. Three of the guards fought lustily, but were overpowered and carried away prisoners. When they were exchanged the generous and grateful Schuyler gave each of them a farm in Saratoga county.



General Schuyler was one of the New York State Senators; one of the principal contributors to the code of laws adopted by that State; and United States Senator from 1789 to 1791, and again in 1797. He was an earnest advocate of internal improvements for the development of the resources of the country, and he is justly called the "father of the canal system of the United States." He was a man of large wealth. He owned a fine mansion in the then southern suburbs of Albany, and a plain one on his large estate at Saratoga. The latter, with its mills and other property, valued at \$50,000, was destroyed by the British at the time of Burgoyne's invasion. He died in Albany, N. Y., November 18, 1804.



Site Copyright 2003-2018 Son of the South. For Questions or comments about this collection,

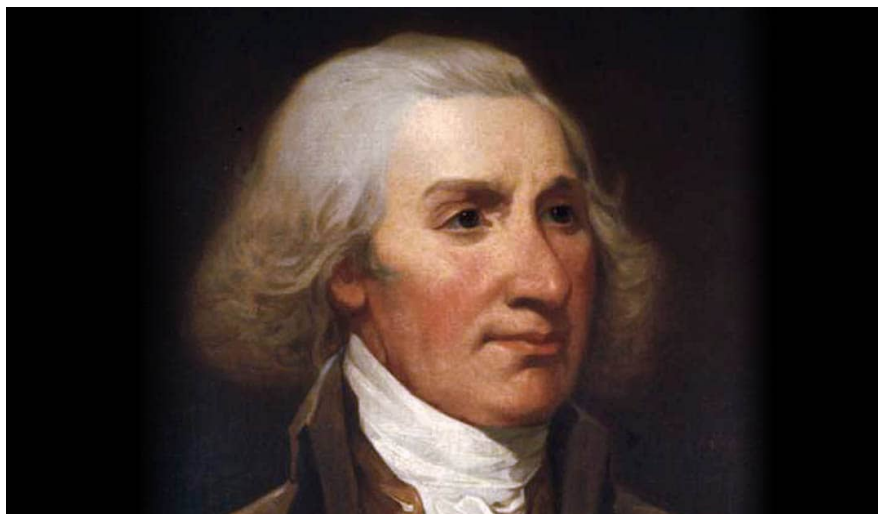
contact: paul@sonofthesouth.net

[privacy policy](#).

Are you Scared and Confused? Read [My Snake Story](#), a story of hope and encouragement, to help you face your fears.



Shop by price with Google



Philip Schuyler was one of the first four Major Generals appointed by the Continental Congress in June 1776.

Philip Schuyler, Biography

November 20, 1733–November 18, 1804 — Major General in the Continental Army

Philip Schuyler was a wealthy New York patroon and one of the four original major generals of the Continental Army. He played a key role in the American victory in the Battle of Saratoga and in maintaining the neutrality of the tribes of the Six Nations.

Advertisements

Photos Show A Bit Too Much

Bonvoyaged.com

Major General Philip Schuyler played a controversial, yet significant role in the Revolutionary War. He was one of the four major generals appointed by the [Continental Congress](#) in 1775 and he was placed in command of the Northern Department. Early on, he was tasked with planning and executing the Invasion of Canada, but his chronic health problems kept him from the field. Despite the failure of the campaign, his excellent logistical skills allowed him to keep the army supplied and later to escape from Canada. In 1777, his tactical moves slowed down the British invasion led by General John Burgoyne, which ultimately led to the British surrender at Saratoga. Daniel Webster, the renowned statesman, and orator referred to Schuyler as “second only to Washington in the service he rendered to the American Colonies.”

Facts About His Early Life, Education, and Family

Schuyler was born in Albany, New York on November 20, 1733, into a prominent family of Dutch ancestry. His father was Johannes “John” Schuyler and his mother was Cornelia van Cortlandt. She also came from a prominent New York family. Schuyler’s grandfather was the first mayor of Albany.

- His father died the day before his 8th birthday.

- By the time he was 18 he had left school and returned to Albany. He learned the language of the Mohawk Indians and went on trading expeditions into Indian territory.
- He married Catherine van Rensselaer on September 17, 1755.
- They had 15 children. Eight survived to adulthood.
- His daughter, Elizabeth, married [Alexander Hamilton](#) on December 14, 1780, at the Schuyler estate.

Facts About His Early Career in Business and Politics

- He received a vast inheritance, which he expanded through land speculation and other means, including the development of a manufacturing center at his estate in Saratoga.
- He built the first flax mill for making linen in America.
- He was elected to the Provincial Assembly of New York in 1768. He represented Albany until 1775 and was closely associated with the Livingston's and the Whig Party.
- He led the assembly's opposition to the [Coercive Acts](#) and was elected as a delegate to the [First Continental Congress](#).

Facts About His Role in the French and Indian War

Schuyler served in the Colonial Provincial Army during the French and Indian War. He was involved in the battles of Lake George, Oswego River, Fort Carillon (Ticonderoga), and Fort Frontenac. During the war, he gained significant experience in logistics, serving as a quartermaster responsible for procuring and transporting supplies to the armies.

In 1755 he was commissioned by the governor to raise a company to go with Major General William Johnson to attack Crown Point.

- After the [Battle of Lake George](#) on September 8, 1755, he was detailed to escort French prisoners back to Albany.
- He was primarily a quartermaster but did see combat at Fort Oswego and Ticonderoga.
- He established a military depot at Fort Edward.

In 1756, Governor William Shirley sent Colonel John Bradstreet to Oswego with provisions. Schuyler served under Bradstreet for the operation. During the expedition, Bradstreet's troops were attacked by a French party. Schuyler saved the life of a Canadian who had been injured in the battle and left behind by his fellow Canadians.

- He also served under Colonel William Jonson, Colonel James Abercrombie, and General Sir Jeffrey Amherst.
- He resigned his commission in 1757 and sold provisions to the army, from which he made a substantial income.
- He returned to military service in 1758 as a deputy commissary with the rank of major.
- By 1759, he had risen to the rank of colonel.
- He operated out of Albany from 1759–1760 while he supplied General Jeffrey Amherst's army.

He became friends with Bradstreet, and the two of them sailed to Britain in 1761 to settle Schuyler's account with the war office. During the trip to England, he saw the English canal system in operation, and it would inspire him, later on, to help promote and design similar canals in the Hudson Valley.

Facts About His Life After the French and Indian War

After the war, he inherited thousands of acres throughout the Mohawk Valley and Hudson Valley. He also inherited the Schuyler homestead near West Troy, New York from his uncle, Phillip. He also inherited land in the area known as the Saratoga Patent.

With the expansion of his land holdings, he also expanded his business operations. He added a store, mills, and built several schooners to transport goods on the Hudson River. He named the first one *Saratoga*. He also expanded the workforce for his operations, adding tenant farmers and slaves.

- He was elected to the New York State Assembly in 1768.
- He supported the idea that the King and Parliament were infringing on the constitutional rights of the colonists as British subjects, but did not support the radical actions of groups like the Sons of Liberty.
- When it came to the dispute between New Hampshire and New York over the New Hampshire Grants, he sided with New York. His stance on the matter damaged his reputation in New England.

Facts About His Role in American Revolution

Schuyler was one of the four men who were commissioned as major generals in the Continental Army on June 16, 1775. The other three were Charles Lee, [Artemas Ward](#), and [Israel Putnam](#).

- Schuyler was given his commission as a major general primarily because one of them needed to be from New York. Lee and Ward outranked him.
- He was named commander of the Northern Department and tasked with planning and executing the Invasion of Canada.
- He established his headquarters in his hometown of Albany.

Schuyler disliked his troops and discussed this frequently in letters he wrote to [George Washington](#). He looked down on them because he thought they were undisciplined and lazy. In turn, they disliked him because they perceived him as an arrogant aristocrat with an elitist attitude.

and up the Richelieu River toward Montreal. After taking Montreal, Schuyler would move north to Quebec and attack from the south. Meanwhile, Arnold would lead an army across the wilderness and surprise the British by attacking Quebec from the east. Unfortunately, logistical delays and health issues plagued Schuyler, and he was forced to turn the field command over to Brigadier General [Richard Montgomery](#).

- After he was named commander-in-chief of the Continental Army Washington left Philadelphia and headed to Boston to take command of the forces that had the British trapped in the city. Schuyler accompanied him from Philadelphia to New York.
- Schuyler planned to lead the expedition into Canada and take Montreal. Then he would lead his army north to Quebec, where he would meet up with Benedict Arnold's army and capture the city.
- Schuyler was delayed for various reasons and Brigadier General Richard Montgomery proceeded to push ahead and [begin the attack on Fort St. John in September](#).
- He eventually met up with Montgomery and directed the early days of the siege of the fort. However, Schuyler's chronic sickness caused him to turn command over to Montgomery for the remainder of the operations in Canada.
- Before he left Canada, he wrote a circular letter that was sent out to people in Quebec. The letter explained Congress was intent on restoring the rights of every subject in the British empire, regardless of religious views.
- Schuyler left Fort St. John and returned to Fort Ticonderoga. From there he directed the acquisition and transportation of supplies and provisions for Montgomery's army.

After Montgomery captured Montreal he gave his men the option of leaving the army and returning home. A significant number of them accepted the offer and made their way to Fort Ticonderoga where Schuyler was tasked with discharging them. There were so many that Schuyler took to discharging them in groups in order to speed up the process.

It was around this time that Schuyler ran into some trouble with the men from Connecticut. The prisoners captured at Fort St. John and Fort Chambly were sent to Fort Ticonderoga. They arrived at Crown Point in late November on two ships, but the water had turned to ice and prevented them from going any further.

A message was sent to Schuyler, asking for help and he instructed three captains from [David Wooster's](#) regiment to take their men and go help the stranded ships. They refused to follow Schuyler's orders. The next day, November 29, Schuyler issued a public order and called out the three captains for their refusal to provide assistance. The men were embarrassed by the public humiliation and were critical of Schuyler to their superiors.

Schuyler planned to return to Albany for the winter, but before he left Ticonderoga, he made arrangements that he felt would help facilitate the removal of the cannons, artillery, and military stores by [Henry Knox](#). These weapons would be used to drive the British out of Massachusetts and end the [Siege of Boston](#).

- Schuyler arrived at Albany on December 7 and stayed there through the rest of the winter of 1775-1776.
- On December 31, 1775, Montgomery and Arnold launched a failed attack on Quebec. Montgomery was killed and Arnold laid siege to the city.
- The Americans were forced to retreat from Canada late in May 1776. By then, they were under the command of General John Sullivan. Schuyler acquired the boats and canoes that helped them make their way back to Fort Ticonderoga.
- In the summer of 1776, he supervised the defense of Fort Ticonderoga and the construction of a navy at Skenesborough. He was assisted by General Horatio Gates, who was also his rival for command of the Northern Department.
- Although Sir Guy Carleton defeated Benedict Arnold's fleet at the Battle of Valcour Island, Carleton would not risk attacking Ticonderoga with winter coming on, since Schuyler had made the effort to improve its defenses. Carleton fell back to Montreal, and New York remained under the control of the Americans through the winter of 1776.

TROUBLE WITH HORATIO GATES AND THE CONTINENTAL CONGRESS

- Schuyler faced a significant amount of criticism in Congress for his alleged failures in the Canada Campaign, and he took the criticism personally.
- On January 9, 1777, Congress dismissed Dr. Samuel Stringer. Stringer was the Director of Hospitals in the Northern Department. Schuyler protested the move because he was not consulted.
- He was reprimanded for his remarks to Congress in March 1777 and Congress sent Horatio Gates to take command of the American forces at Ticonderoga.

It was unclear who was supposed to be in command of the Northern Department – Schuyler or Gates – so Schuyler met with George Washington in early April and then went to Philadelphia to meet with Congress to clarify the situation. It was determined that Schuyler was in command, and Gates was his subordinate. Gates left the Northern Department and rushed to Philadelphia to make his case to Congress against Schuyler while Schuyler returned to the north.

BATTLE OF SARATOGA

- In July 1777, Schuyler ordered General Arthur St. Clair to evacuate Fort Ticonderoga, which allowed General John Burgoyne to capture it unopposed. Congress was furious with Schuyler for leaving the fort unprotected, especially the faction that favored Gates.
- However, by removing the troops, Schuyler was able to draw Burgoyne from Skenesborough down the Hudson River, which turned into a logistical nightmare for the British.
- Schuyler sent a force under the command of Benedict Arnold to help end the British siege of Fort Stanwix. Arnold only had about 700 men with him, but the British, under the command of Brigadier General Barry St. Leger, thought he had 3,000. By the time St. Leger abandoned the siege, it was too late for him to provide support to Burgoyne at Saratoga.
- Congress replaced Schuyler with Horatio Gates on August 4, 1777.
- As the British approached the Schuyler homestead in Saratoga, Catherine had the crops burned, so the British could not use them.

RESIGNATION FROM THE CONTINENTAL ARMY

Schuyler demanded the charges against him of incompetence and dereliction of duty be heard before a military court. He was found innocent of all charges in October 1778. Unfortunately, the damage to his reputation had been done. He resigned from military service in April 1779.

Facts About His Role After He Resigned from the Army

Due to his relationship with the tribes of the Six Nations, he remained on the Board of Commissioners for Indian Affairs, and despite his issues with the Continental Congress, Schuyler remained close with George Washington. In fact, the Washingtons were godparents to Schuyler's youngest daughter, Catharine, who was baptized in 1781.

- He was elected to the Continental Congress again in 1779.
- He advised Washington about General John Sullivan's expedition into Iroquois territory in 1779.
- From April to August 1780, he assisted in the reorganization of the army staff departments and helped work out the details for cooperating with the French forces.

Schuyler's ability to negotiate with the Indians created problems for the British because they were also trying to create alliances with them. The British tried to kidnap Schuyler several times, in an effort to eliminate his influence over the Indians.

In the summer of 1781, Walter Meyer, who was a Tory, led a group made up of Tories, Canadians, and Indians and attempted to kidnap Schuyler. Meyer and his gang forced a local laborer to tell them about the situation at Schuyler's house. However, after he was let go he informed Schuyler of the plot. Although the gang was able to force its way into the house, it was scared off when Schuyler opened an upstairs window and yelled for help. The gang did kidnap three of Schuyler's guards, who were later returned in a prisoner exchange. Schuyler showed his thanks to the guards by giving each of them a farm in Saratoga.

- He served as the first Surveyor-General of New York from 1781-1784.
- He supported the ratification of the Constitution.
- He reversed course on the dispute over the New Hampshire Grants and supported New York dropping its claims to the territory, which helped pave the way for the New Hampshire Grants to become the state of Vermont.
- He was elected as one of New York's first senators in 1789.
- He lost his re-election bid to [Aaron Burr](#) in 1791. Burr was backed by the Livingston and Clinton families, who were political enemies of Schuyler. The defeat infuriated his son-in-law, Alexander Hamilton, who had backed Schuyler. It was one of the first disputes between Burr and Hamilton that eventually led to their fateful duel.
- Schuyler reclaimed the seat in 1797 due to Hamilton's backing and control of state politics.
- He retired in 1798 due to poor health and lived out his remaining years with his family in Albany.

Catherine passed away in 1803, and Schuyler was dealt another blow in July 1804 when he learned about Hamilton's death after his duel with Aaron Burr. After her husband's death, Elizabeth visited her father at Albany late in the summer of 1804. She returned to New York in November and her father passed away two weeks later.

- He died on November 18, 1804.
- He was buried with full military honors in the vault of General Abraham Ten Broeck.
- His remains were re-interred in the Albany Rural Cemetery.

Significance of His Role in the American Revolution

Schuyler's qualifications were questionable from the beginning because he had never held independent command before, but he helped negotiate neutrality with the tribes of the Six Nations and explored all options to secure equipment and provisions for his army.

Unfortunately, his military actions during the Revolutionary War were filled with controversy and were hampered by his bouts with pleurisy, gout, and fever. He was one of the few high-ranking American officers of the war that did not see action in any major battles.

Although he had his own limitations, Congress failed him in many ways, especially when it came to sending men and equipment. However, he was unpopular with the troops and openly argued with members of the Continental Congress.

- At the Siege of Fort St. John, he chose difficult terrain to launch an attack and then turned the command of the expedition over to Montgomery. Montgomery and Arnold nearly conquered Canada, but [Ethan Allen](#) was captured at the [Battle of Montreal](#), and Montgomery was killed at the Battle of Quebec.
- He understood the strategic importance of Lake Champlain and constructed a fleet of ships to help defend it.
- Schuyler worked to save the northern army from disaster during its retreat in the spring of 1776 but was blamed for the failure of the Invasion of Canada.
- He failed to gauge the strength of Burgoyne's army in 1777 which contributed to the British capturing Fort Ticonderoga even though abandoning the fort was likely a sound strategy.
- Under his leadership, the morale of his troops fell, and Congress had little choice other than to replace him with Gates.
- Although he was not a brilliant leader on the battlefield, he made significant contributions to the war effort in the north through his negotiations with the Six Nations and his strategic moves that set the northern army up for victory over the British at Saratoga.

Facts About His Legacy

In 1791, Elkanah Watson proposed a canal to connect the Hudson River with the Great Lakes. He met with Schuyler, who thought highly of the idea and supported it in the New York state legislature. Schuyler took the same concept and applied it to the corridor between the Hudson and Lake Champlain. In 1792, the Western Inland Lock & Navigation Company and the Northern Inland Lock and & Navigation Company were chartered. Schuyler was the president of both companies.



- He served on the New York Board of Regents, starting in 1784.
- He co-founded Union College in Schenectady, New York.
- His son, Philip Jeremiah Schuyler, served in the U.S. House of Representatives.
- His daughter, Margarita, married Stephen Van Rensselaer III, the Eighth Patroon of Rensselaerswyck.
- In 1871, a 36-foot tall monument was erected in his memory.

Advertisements

Don't eat this anymore

Written by [Randal Rust](#)

Citation Information

The following information is provided for citations.

- Article Title Philip Schuyler, Biography
- Coverage November 20, 1733–November 18, 1804
- Author Randal Rust
- Website Name American History Central
- Access Date May 20, 2022
- Publisher R.Squared Communications, LLC
- Original Published Date June 19, 2021
- Date of Last Update May 2, 2022

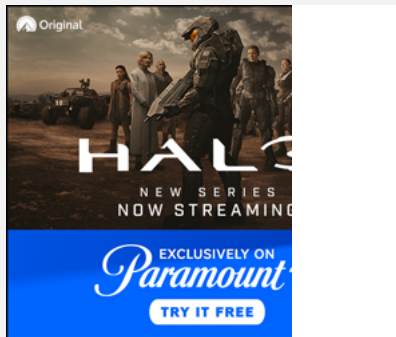
Advertisements



Sections

- 1706–1754 - Colonial America
- 1763–1781 - American Revolution
- 1781–1788 - Articles of Confederation
- 1788–1817 - Early Republic
- A-Z
- Encyclopedia
- Entries
- S

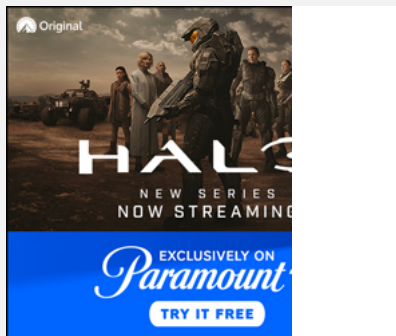
Advertisements



Tags

- People
- Recent Entries
- Revolutionary War - Soldiers - American

Advertisements



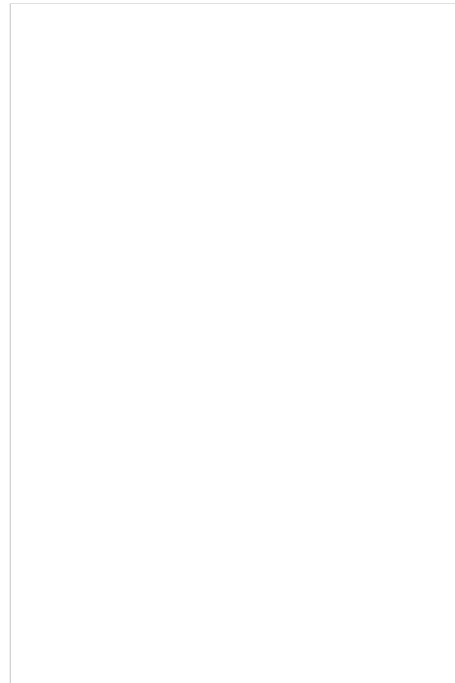
Revolutionary War Officers

- George Washington
- Alexander Hamilton
- Henry Knox
- Benedict Arnold
- Ethan Allen
- Artemas Ward
- Israel Putnam



Johann de Kalb
Joseph Warren
John Armstrong, Jr.
James Clinton

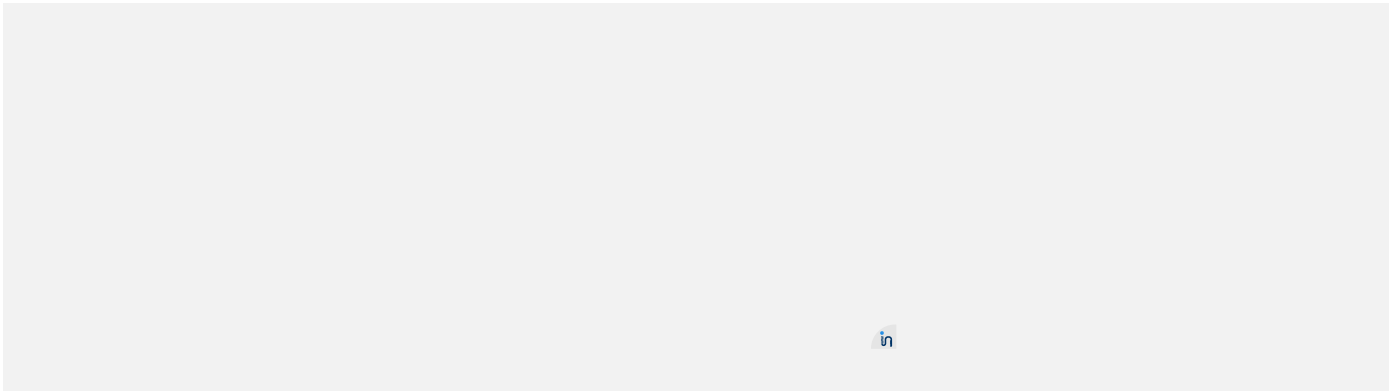
Advertisement



BUY ON
AMAZON

| SHARE

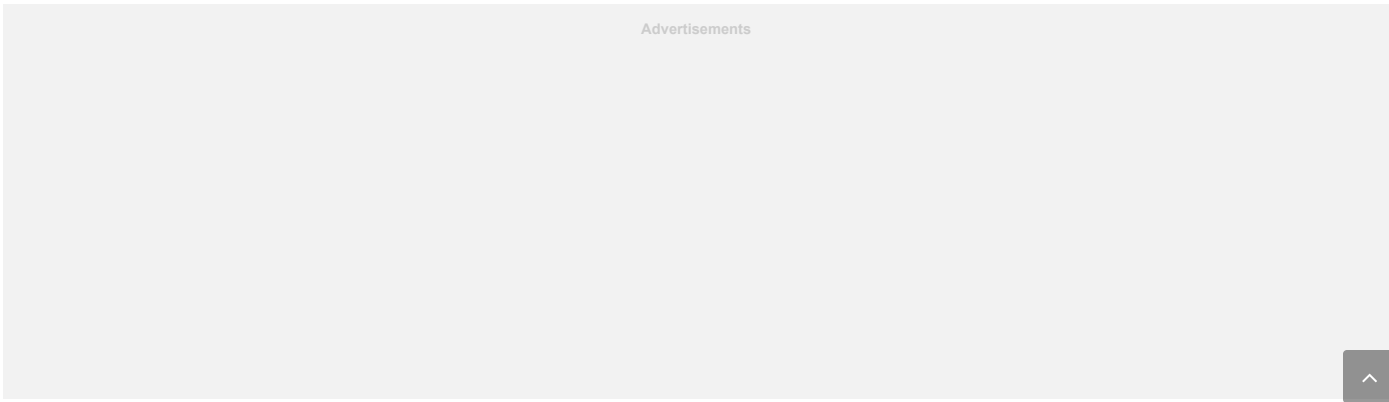
| FREE
PREVIEW



Advertisement



BUY ON AMAZON SHARE FREE PREVIEW	BUY ON AMAZON SHARE FREE PREVIEW	BUY ON AMAZON SHARE FREE PREVIEW
BUY ON AMAZON SHARE FREE PREVIEW	BUY ON AMAZON SHARE FREE PREVIEW	



Advertisements



Sections

1607–1706 - Exploration & Settlement
1706–1754 - Colonial America
1754–1763 - French and Indian War
1763–1781 - American Revolution
1781–1788 - Articles of Confederation
1788–1817 - Early Republic
1817–1861 - Growth and Turmoil
1861–1865 - Civil War
1865–1877 - Reconstruction
1877–1900 - Gilded Age

Featured Entries

Quasi-War (1798-1800)
First Barbary War
XYZ Affair

Most Popular Entries

Benjamin Franklin
John Adams
Abigail Adams
Thomas Jefferson
Benjamin Rush
Alexander Hamilton
James Madison
John Jay

About AHC

American History Central is an independent encyclopedia of American history, built on the **eCMS platform**. The site is owned, operated, and funded by R.Squared Communications, LLC.

Advertising

American History Central is a participant in the Amazon Services LLC Associates Program, a program designed to allow sites to generate revenue by advertising and linking to Amazon.com. As an Amazon Associate, I earn from qualifying purchases. Please view our **Privacy Policy** regarding the use of cookies and visitor tracking.

American History Central also displays ads from third-party networks.

George Washington Papers, Series 2, Letterbooks 1754-1799

To THE NEW HAMPSHIRE LEGISLATURE

Cambridge, March 14, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 12th Instant I just now received and beg leave to assure you that the approbation which your Honbl. Council are pleased to express of my Conduct respecting the Operations against the Town of Boston, affords me the highest satisfaction.

I am exceedingly sorry that it is not in my power at this time to comply with your requisition for powder and to make a return of what was generously lent for the Continental use, the low state of our store of that necessary Article, will not allow me to spare the smallest quantity, but hoping that I may get a further supply before long to enable me to do It, I shall be much obliged, If you will favor me with an account of what you furnished, that it may be repaid as soon as circumstances will admit of It. I am Sir, &c.

To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE

Cambridge, March 17, 1776.

Sir: I have the Pleasure to inform you, that this morning the Ministerial Troops evacuated the Town of Boston, without destroying it.³⁹ and that we are now in the full possession; upon which event, I beg

39. An account of the evacuation, in the *Boston Gazette*, states that the enemy was seen to march from Bunker Hill about 9 a. m., and at the same time a great many boats. filled with troops, put off from Boston for the fleet, which lay below Castle William. Part of the Continentals came down the river from Cambridge by boats and landed at Sewells Point. General Ward's troops advanced from Roxbury and entered Boston from that direction. The command of the town was entrusted to General Putnam.

leave to Congratulate you, and sincerely wish, if the Ministry persevere in the same unconstitutional and despotic measures, which too long have marked their conduct, that our opposition and resistance, in every Quarter, may be crowned with the success they have been here.

Where their destination is, or what plans they have in view, is altogether unknown; most probably the next attempt will be against New York, or some more Southern Colony. However, I should think, tho' I do not believe they have any design against Rhode Island, that it will be adviseable to keep a strict look out; and submit it to you, whether it may not be proper against the time you apprehend they might arrive, to call in a number of the Militia and have them posted in proper places. I do not mean to direct the Measure, but only to mention It for your Consideration; to me it appears worthy of attention. I am &c.

N. B. March 19th, the Fleet is still in King and Nantasket Roads.

To LORD STIRLING

Cambridge, March 19, 1776.

My Lord: I am now to acknowledge the Receipt of your Favour of the 11th. Inst., and to give you my Congratulations upon your late Appointment by the honourable Congress.⁴⁹

If the Intelligence is true and to be depended on, which was brought by the Gentleman to New York, I think with you, that we shall have an Opportunity of securing and putting the Continent in a tolerable Posture of Defence and

49. Stirling, on March 1, had been appointed brigadier general.

that the Operations of the Summer's Campaign will not be so terrible, as we were taught to expect from the Accounts and Denunciations which the Ministry held forth to the Public.⁵⁰

I have the Pleasure to inform you, that on the Morning of the 17th Inst. General Howe with his Army abandoned the Town of Boston without destroying it, an Event of much Importance, and which must be heard with great Satisfaction; and that we are now in full Possession of it. Their Embarkation and Retreat were hurried and precipitate and they have left behind them Stores of one Kind and another to a pretty considerable Amount, among which are several Pieces of heavy Cannon and one or two Mortars, which are spiked.

The Town is in a much better Situation, and less injured than I expected, from the Reports I had received; tho' it is much damaged, and many Houses despoil'd of their valuable Furniture.

The Fleet is still in King and Nantasket Roads; and where they intend to make a Descent next is altogether unknown; but supposing New York to be an Object of much Importance and to be in their View, I must recommend your most strenuous and active Exertions in preparing to prevent any Designs or Attempts, they may have against it. I have detached the Rifle Men and five Battalions from hence to your Assistance, which will be followed by others as Circumstances will allow. These, with what Forces are there, and can be assembled if there should be an Occasion, I trust, will be sufficient to hinder the Enemy from possessing the City or making a Lodgment 'till the main Body of this Army can arrive. I am, My Lord, &c.

50. The news brought by these gentlemen was to the effect that Great Britain had engaged 10,000 Hanoverians and Hessians for service in America, and was endeavoring to obtain 10,000 Russians. Seven regiments (about 4,000 men) were to sail from Cork for the southern colonies and "That the french Ambassador at London had declared to the English Ministry that His Master did not mean to Meddle with the Quarrel between G. Britain and her Colonies which [while?] it was Carried on with its own force. But that he Could not be an Idle Spectator if any foreign Aid was made use of. (It was not then known in London that the french had any Troops in the West India Islands)." Stirling's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Head Quarters, Cambridge, March 19, 1776.

Sir: It is with the greatest pleasure I inform you that on Sunday last the 17th. Instant, about 9th O'Clock in the forenoon the Ministerial Army evacuated the Town of Boston, and that the Forces of the United Colonies are now in actual Possession thereof. I beg leave to congratulate you Sir, and the Honorable Congress on this happy event, and particularly as it was effected without endangering the Lives and property of the remaining unhappy Inhabitants.⁴⁴

I have great reason to imagine their flight was precipitated by the appearance of a Work which I had ordered to be thrown up last Saturday night, on an eminence at Dorchester, which lay nearest to Boston Neck called Newks Hill. The Town although it has suffered greatly, is not in so bad a state as I expected to find it, and I have a particular pleasure in being able to inform you Sir, that your House has received no damage worth mentioning, your furniture is in tolerable Order and the family pictures are all left entire and untouched. Captn. Cazneau takes charge of the whole until he receives further Orders from you.

As soon as the Ministerial Troops had quited the Town, I ordered a Thousand men (who had had the small pox) under command of General Putnam, to take possession of the Heights, which I shall fortify in such a manner, as to prevent their return, should they attempt it; but as they are still in the Harbour, I thought it not prudent to march off with the main body of the Army, until I should be fully satisfied they had quited the Coast. I have therefore only detached five Regiments besides the Rifle Battalion to New York, and shall keep the remainder here 'till all suspicion of their return ceases.

The situation in which I found their Works,

44. "We saw the ships under way about 8 in the morning and the River full of boats armed with soldiers. This gave an alarm and some suspected they were about to land at Dorchester, but having a full view of them with a glass from Plowed Hill, I found they were going on board the ships. I then took my horse, and rode down to Charlestown Neck, where I had a clear view of Bunker's Hill. I saw the sentrys standing as usual with their firelocks shouldered, but finding they never moved, I soon suspected what regiment they belonged to; and upon taking a clear view with my glass, found they were only effigies set there by the flying enemy. This convinced me that they were actually fled, for if they meant to decoy us, they would have taken away every appearance of man. By this time, I was joined by Colo. Mifflin, who, with my Brigade Major agreed to go up, sending two persons round the works to examine whether there was any of them in the rear of the works, while we went up in the front. I at the same time sent for a strong party to follow us on to the hill to assist us in running away (if necessary). We found no person there and bravely took the fortress defended by lifeless sentries. I then brought on a party to secure what we had so bravely won, and went down to the other works where we found all abandoned, but the works not injured in any part. We hailed the ferry boat, which came over and informed us that they had abandoned the town. We then gave information to the general, who ordered me with the troops under my command to take possession of Charlestown, and General Putnam with 2000 men to take possession of the works in Boston; and on Monday Morning his Excellency made his entry into Boston, and repaired to Mr. Hancock's house, where we found his furniture left without injury or diminution."— *Brigadier General Sullivan to John Adams*, Mar. 19, 1776.

The fleet of the British consisted of 78 vessels, and carried all of Howe's army, about 8,900 men, and more than 1,1000 refugees.— *Ford*.

evidently discovered that their retreat was made with the greatest precipitation. They have left their Barracks and other works of wood at Bunkers Hill &ca. all standing, and have destroyed but a small part of their Lines. They have also left a number of fine pieces of Cannon, which they first spiked up, also a very large Iron Mortar; and (as I am informed) they have thrown another over the end of your

Wharf—I have employed proper Persons to drill the Cannon, and doubt not I shall save the most of them.

I am not yet able to procure an exact List of all the Stores they have left. As soon as it can be done I shall take care to transmit it to you. From an estimate already made, by the Quarter Master General, of what he has discovered, they will amount to 25 or 30,000£.

Part of the Powder mentioned in yours of the 6th Instant has already arrived; The remainder I have ordered to be stop'd on the Road as we shall have no occasion for it here. The Letter to General Thomas I immediately sent to him; he desired leave for three or four days to settle some of his private affairs after which he will set out for his Command in Canada.⁴⁵ I am happy that my Conduct in intercepting Lord Dunmore's Letter is approved of by Congress. I am etc.⁴⁶

45. On March 6 Brig. Gen. John Thomas was promoted to major general and assigned to the command in Canada. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*.)

46. In the writing of William Palfrey. Through inadvertence Washington did not sign this letter.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

Cambridge, March 19, 1776.

Dear Sir: The 17th. Instt. Mr. Bennet handed me your Favor of the 9th. It mortifies me beyond Expression to find the Troops going to Canada, so badly provided with Arms. I have so often mentioned the Situation we are in from the same Cause, that I shall not trouble you more thereon. Indeed, your Letters and mine seem Echoes to each other, enumerating our mutual Difficulties. Should Success crown our Labours, the Reflection will not be disagreeable.

A short Detail of what has happen'd here since I wrote you last, will, I dare say, afford you Pleasure.

The night of the 4th. Inst. we possessed ourselves of Dorchester Heights, which alarmed the Enemy so much that they made their Dispositions to engage us, which was what I most earnestly wished for; but a violent storm coming on the Evening of the 5th. gave us Time to strengthen our Works, and cool'd the Enemy's Ardor. From that Moment they made all possible Diligence in preparing to move off.—Our advancing still closer to them; on the 15th. by taking Post on an Eminence, called Nooks Hill which commands their Works on the Neck of Land, which separates the Town from Roxbury, also commands the South Part of Boston, has obliged the Enemy to take to their Ships, which,

rather precipitately, they effected the 17th. in the morning, leaving behind them about 30 Pieces of excellent Cannon, and two Mortars, spiked, a Number of Ball, some Shells, the chief Part of their Light Horse Forrage, 20,000 Bushells of Wheat, 2500 Chaldron of Coal, Salt, Rugs,

Blankets, with many other Articles too tedious to mention.

The Ships now lie below the Castle, extending themselves to Nantasket Road, about nine Miles. I do not expect that they will pay us another Visit; tho' as a Number of Transports have appeared this Morning to have joined them, they may be tempted, which will prevent my sending off any more Troops, untill they quit the Harbour. It is uncertain where they may go from hence. Long Island or New York is, in my Opinion, the Place of their Destination. I have sent off a Rifle Regiment, and five Battalions to New York and when I can be certain of their having fairly left these Parts, I shall remove the Rest of the Army there, where I shall have great Pleasure to meet you in tolerable Health.

The Return of the Troops with General Arnold, is received, also the Depositions respecting Colonel Allen's Usage, which has been very cruel.

I am in Hopes we shall be able to collect some hard Money from the Inhabitants of Boston. If we do, you shall soon be informed thereof.

Application has been made to the Commissary Mr. Chamier, relative to the Subsistence of the Prisoners in our Possession, which, I believe is settled with David Franks of Philadelphia. I remain, etc.

To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE

Cambridge, March 21, 1776.

Sir: Your favors of the 18th and 19th Insts. I received, and am extremely sorry to hear that your Militia are so deficient in Arms. I fear the misfortune is too common, nor do I know how it will be

remedied. In this Army, altho' I have pursued every mode I could devise for procuring them, there is still a great deficiency and a considerable number of Men without any in their hands. The peculiar situation of Rhode Island and its extensive Sea Coast, had not escaped my mind; I well know the Enemy have it in their Power to do it considerable damage, unless there is a Sufficient force to repel their Attempts: But it is the opinion of the General Officers here, that their destination is against New York, the Importance of which, as it secures the free and only Communication between the Northern

and Southern Colonies, which will be intirely cut off by their possessing it, and give them the Command of Hudson's River and an easy pass into Canada; makes it absolutely and indispensably necessary, for the whole of this Army, which is but inconsiderable, (except that part of It which will be left here to secure the Stores, Barracks and other Public property), to be marched from hence for its defence with all possible expedition. It is an object that should Command our first attention, and if lost, will be of the most fatal consequence to us in the present unhappy and Interesting struggle. Least any Attempts should be made against you, I shall give orders to the Officers Commanding Brigades, If they have intelligence of an Invasion, upon their March, that they forthwith return to your Succour. I shall also Order the Officer, who will be left here, to do the same with the Troops under his Command, whenever occasion may require It.

Agreeable to the request made by you and your Honble General Assembly, I shall with chearfulness and pleasure direct some of the last divisions that go from hence, to puruse the Route you wish, If they can be accomodated

with Covering and Provision, and shall be ever ready and happy to render Rhode Island or any other place any Services in my power that may be compatible with the General good. I am Sir, with sentiments of the highest regard, Your and theirs &c.

To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

Cambridge, March 21, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 18th Inst. and concur with you in opinion, that their Women and Children with the Tory families will most probably go to Halifax; this is what I meant and alluded to, having never suspected that they (especially the latter) would go to New York.

I am extremely obliged by your friendly hint and shall ever receive them with pleasure, But I do not think that they were apprehensive of an attack from our Side, but rather preparing to make one; However let their designs have been what they may, I have the satisfaction to inform you, that on Sunday Morning last they totally evacuated the Town, and we are now in full possession, upon which event, I beg leave to congratulate you and more so, as the Town is in a much better situation than was expected; added to this, they have left by means of their percipitate retreat, Stores of one kind and another, to a pretty considerable amount, a particular detail of which or estimate of their value, I have not yet got. Notwithstanding they have abandoned the Town, and there have been favorable winds for their departure, they are still lying with their fleet in Nantasket Road, but for what purpose, is a matter of much conjecture; some supposing their Vessels to have been loaded with such hurry

and confusion, as to be unfit for Sea and to require sundry things and arrangements to be settled previous to their going out; But for my own part, I cannot but suspect they are waiting for some opportunity to give us a Stroke, at a

moment when they conceive us to be off guard, in order to retrieve the honor they have lost by their shameful and scandalous retreat, diminishing from that Lustre and renown which British Armies were wont to boast and justly claimed as their right. Suspecting them of such motives, I shall not detach any more of the Army, than what is gone already; until they have taken their departure and quitted the Coast.

I heartily thank you for your kind attention to my last requisition, and am glad that the Companies you have ordered are of the Militia, the trouble and Inconveniences occasioned by them, being far less than what generally attend Volunteers. Nothing but Necessity and the Importance of New York to us in the present contest, could have induced the application and therefore as soon as they can be spared, by the arrival of our Army, they will be at Liberty to return home to their common and necessary employments, except such as choose to Inlist and continue in Service.

In compliance with your request, I shall direct the Troops or some of them, that go from hence, after the Ministerial Fleet are gone, to pursue their rout on or near the Sea Coast, If they can be accomodated with Covering and Provision; that they may be ready to oppose the Enemy, in case they make any attempt upon your Colony, about the time of their going, tho' that is what I do not apprehend, I rather suppose when they once set out, that they will repair to New York or where ever bound with all possible despatch, to secure the place they are destined for, by surprize, lest preparations should be made to receive and prevent them. I am etc.

To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE

Cambridge, March 21, 1776.

Gentn.: Er'e now, I was in hopes of congratulating you on the departure of the Ministerial Troops, not only from your Capital, but Country. That they still remain in the Harbour, after having been five days embarked, affords matter for speculation, and, collected as their force is now, of apprehension. This Circumstance, the Security of Boston by a work on Fort Hill & demolition of the Lines on the Neck, and preservation of the Stores, for Continental use, belonging to the King, by a proper search after them, rendered it indispensably necessary for me to throw some Troops into the Town immediately (It coming within the line of my duty); but notwithstanding all the precaution, which

I have endeavoured to use, to restrain and limit the Intercourse between the Town and Army and Country for a few days, I greatly fear that the Small Pox will be communicated to both.

So soon as the fleet sets Sail, my attention must be turned to another Quarter, and most of the Continental Regiments now here march'd off. It may be necessary therefore, for you, Gentn., to consider the state of your Harbour, and think of such works as shall be found necessary for the defence of it, and the Town, in case another Armed Force (which I by no means expect) should be sent hither. I shall leave three or four Regiments, as circumstances may require, for security of the Stores, and throwing up such works as shall be deemed necessary for the purposes above mentioned; and shall direct the Officer Commanding them, to receive such Instructions, in respect to the latter, as you may think proper to give.

It has been suggested to me, that, in the Town of

Boston &c., there is a good deal of property belonging to Refugees and such other Inimical persons, as from the first of the present dispute, have manifested the most unfriendly disposition to the American Cause; and, that part of this Property is in such kind of effects, as can be easily transported, concealed, or changed. I submit to you, therefore, Gentlemen, the expediency of having an Enquiry made into this Matter, before it is too late for redress, leaving the decision thereupon (after the Quantum, or Value, is ascertained, and held in state of durance) to the consideration of a future day. I have ordered that no violence be offered by the Soldiery, either to the Persons, or property of those people; wishing that the matter may be taken into consideration by your Honorable body, and in such a way as you shall judge most advisable.⁵⁴

The inclosed came to me a few days ago, and I beg leave to recommend the purport of it to the consideration of the Court. I shall take the Liberty to add, as my opinion, that the Congress expect nothing else, than that the Field Officers of the Massachusetts Regiments, should receive the same pay as those of the other Colonies have done; and that they expected, at the time the pay was fixed, that £15 to a Colonel, £12 to Lieut. Colonel and £10 to a Major, was the actual establishment of this Government. I could wish, therefore, they were allowed it, to remove the Jealousies and uneasiness which have arisen. I am etc.

54. The number of refugees who left Boston with the British Army was more than 1,000. The following statement is taken from the official return made to the government and now deposited in the public offices in London: "Members of the council, commissioners, customhouse officers, and other persons who had been in some official station, 182; clergy, 18; persons from the country, 105; merchants and other inhabitants of Boston, 213; farmers, traders, and mechanics, 382; total,

924." All these returned their names on their arrival in Halifax. About 200 others did not return their names.

General Howe wrote from Halifax to Lord George Germain (April 25): "Many of the principal inhabitants of Boston under the protection of the army, having no means of subsistence here, apply to me to find them a passage to Europe, which they cannot otherwise get than at a most exorbitant rate. They have my assurance, that the first transport that can be spared shall be given up for this purpose. I am sorry to inform your Lordship, that there is an absolute necessity of issuing provisions to the whole of them, about eleven hundred, from the King's stores, without any prospect of stopping it. It must be confessed, that many, having quitted the whole of their property and estates, some of them very considerable in value, are real objects of his Majesty's most gracious attention." By the army returns the British force amounted to about 8,900, officers and men. They sailed in 78 ships and transports.— *Sparks*.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Cambridge, March 24, 1776.

Sir: When I had the Honor to address you the 19th Instant, upon the evacuation of the Town of Boston by the Ministerial Army, I fully expected, as their retreat and embarkation were hurried and precipitate, that before now they would have departed the Harbour, and been far in their passage to the place of Destination. But to my surprize and disappointment the Fleet is still in Nantasket road. The purpose induceing their stay is altogether unknown; nor can I suggest any satisfactory reason for it. On Wednesday night last, the whole Fleet fell down to Nantasker, they demolished the Castle and Houses belonging to it, by burning them down, and the several Fortifications. They left a great Number of the Cannon, but have rendered all of them, except a very few, entirely useless by breaking off the Trunnions, and those they spiked up, but may be made serviceable again; some are already done.

There are several Vessels in the Docks which were taken by the Enemy, some with, and others without Cargoes, which different persons claim as their property and right. Are they to be restored to the former owners on making proof of their Title, or to belong to the Continent as Captures made from the Enemy? I wish Congress would direct a mode of proceeding against them, and establish a rule for decision, they appear to me to be highly necessary, in like manner some of the Cannon which are in Boston are said to have come from the Castle; supposing them with those remaining at the Castle to have been purchased and provided originally at the expence of this province; are

they now to be considered as belonging to it or to the public? I beg leave to refer the matter to the opinion of Congress and pray their direction how I am to conduct respecting them.

It having been suggested to me that there was considerable property &ca. belonging to Persons who had from the first of the present unhappy Contest, manifested an unfriendly and inveterate disposition in the Town of Boston.

I thought it prudent to write to the Honorable

General Court upon the Subject, that it might be inquired after and secured; a Copy of the Letter I herewith send you and submit it to Congress through you, whether they will not determine, how it is to be disposed of, and as to the appropriation of the Money arising from the sale of the same.

As soon as the Town was abandoned by the Enemy, I judged it advisable to secure the several heights, lest they should attempt to return, and for this purpose have caused a large and strong work to be thrown up on Fort Hill, a post of great importance, as it commands the whole Harbour and when fortified, If properly supported, will greatly annoy any Fleet the Enemy may send against the Town, and render the Landing of their Troops exceedingly difficult, If not Impracticable. This work is almost done and in a little time will be complete: and that the Communication between the Town and Country may be free and open, I have ordered all the Lines up on the Neck to be immediately destroyed, and the other Works on the side of the Town facing the Country, that the Inhabitants from the latter may not be impeded, and afforded an easy entrance in case the Enemy should gain possession at any future time. These matters I conceived to be within the line of my duty, of which I advised the General Court and recommended to their attention such other measures, as they might think necessary for securing the Town, against the Hostile designs of the Enemy.

I have just got an Inventory of Stores & property belonging to the Crown, which the Enemy left in Boston, at the Castle and Bunker's Hill, which I have the Honor to transmit you,⁶¹ and shall give strict orders, that a careful attention be had to any more that may be found. I shall take such precautions respecting them, that they may be secure and turn to the Public advantage as much as possible or circumstances will admit of.

A Mr. Bulfinch from Boston, who acted as Clerk to Mr. having put into my hands a list of Rations drawn the Saturday before the Troops evacuated the Town,

61. The original of this inventory, made out by John G. Frazer, Assistant Quartermaster General of the Continental Army, is in the *Washington Papers*; a copy is in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

I have inclosed it for your Inspection; he says neither the Staff Officers or Women are included in the list; from which it appears that their number was greater than we had an Idea of.⁶²

Major General Ward and Brigadier General Frye are desirous of leaving the Service and for that purpose have requested me to lay the matter before Congress that they be allowed to resign their Commissions.⁶³ the papers containing their applications you will herewith receive, they will give you full and a more particular Information upon the Subject and therefore shall take the Liberty of referring you to them.

I would mention to Congress, that the Commissary of Artillery Stores has informed me, that whatever Powder has been sent to this Camp, has always come without any Bill ascertaining the Number of Casks or Quantity. This, It is probable, has proceeded from forgetfulness or inattention in the persons appointed to send it, or to the negligence of those who brought it, tho' they have declared otherwise, and that they never had any—as it may prevent in some measure Embezzlements (tho' I do not suspect any to have been made) and the Commissary will know what, and how much to receive, and be enabled to discover mistakes, If any should happen, I shall be glad if you will direct a Bill of Parcels to be always sent in future.

There have been so many Accounts from England, all agreeing that Commissioners are coming to America, to propose Terms for an accommodation as they say, that I am inclined to think the Time of their arrival is not very far off. If they come to Boston, which probably will be the case, if they come to America at all, I shall be under much embarrassment respecting the manner of receiving them, and the mode of Treatment, that ought to be used.⁶⁴ I therefore pray that Congress will give me directions

62. On March 16 Mr. Bulfinch secured the victual return of the ministerial troops in Boston and forwarded it to Washington; by it the strength of each British regiment was shown; the total was 7,579.

63. These resignations were accepted by Congress April 23. Frye's, dated Mar. 18, 1776, and Ward's, dated Mar. 22, 1776, are filed with Washington's letter in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

64. This question was not answered by Congress until a month and a half later, On May 6, Congress resolved: "That General Washington be informed, that Congress suppose, if commissioners are intended to be sent from Great Britain to treat of peace, that the practice usual in such cases will be observed, by making previous application for the necessary passports or safe conduct, and on such

application being made, Congress will then direct the proper measures for the reception of such commissioners."

"It will be observed how long this trifling business had been depending, but it cannot be known from the journal how much debate it had occasioned. It was one of those delusive contrivances by which the party in opposition to us endeavored, by lulling the people with idle hopes of reconciliation into security, to turn their heads and thoughts from independence. They endeavored to insert in the resolution ideas of reconciliation; we carried our point for inserting peace. They wanted powers to be given to the General to receive the Commissioners in ceremony; we ordered nothing to be done till we were solicited for passports. Upon the whole, we avoided the snare, and brought the controversy to a close, with some dignity. But it will never be known how much labor it cost us to accomplish it."— *Works of John Adams*, vol. 3, P. 43.

and point out the Line of Conduct to be persued. Whether they are to be considered as Ambassadors and to have a passport or permits for repairing through the Country to Philadelphia, or to any other place; or whether they are to be restrained in any manner. I shall anxiously wait their orders and whatever they are comply with them literally. I am &ca.⁶⁵

To LORD STIRLING

Cambridge, March 24, 1776.

My Lord: Since my last to you of the 19th. Inst. I had the Pleasure to receive your Favour of the 15th. It gives me vast Satisfaction to find you are making such Preparations as will prevent the Enemy from making any Lodgement there. The Reinforcement gone to you from this Camp will put you on so respectable a Footing, that I have no Doubt, but you will be able to strengthen your Works, in such a Manner, that, even if General Howe should arrive before this Army, you will be able to prevent his taking Post.

The Fleet are now lying in Nantasket Road. The Wind has been these two Days fair for them to sail; but they seem fixed. I really know not what they aim at, I have made such Preparations for them; that, I think it will be very difficult for them to regain the Post at Boston, if they are so inclined. While they remain in Sight, I must stay here to watch their Motions with the Army under my Command. When they move from hence, if nothing unforeseen happens, I shall make the best of my Way to New York, where I shall have great Pleasure in taking your Lordship by the Hand.

You omitted sending the Paper you refer to in your last. It will be a Satisfaction to me to receive it your next. If this should reach you, ere the Departure of the Powder from your Place, you will do well to keep it with you. I am, &c.

65. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Cambridge, March 27, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 11th Instant by Saturday night's post, and must beg pardon for not acknowledging it in my last of the 24th. The hurry I was then in, occasioned the neglect and I hope will appologize for it.

I now beg leave to inform you, that I just received Intelligence that the whole of the Ministerial Fleet, except three or four Ships, got under way this Evening at Nantasket Road and were standing out for Sea.

In consequence of which I shall immediately detach a Brigade of Six Regiments from hence for New York, under the Command of Brigadier General Sullivan (Brigadier General Heath having gone with the first); which will be succeeded by another in a day or two, and directly after I shall forward the remainder of the Army, except four or five Regiments, which will be left for taking care of the Barracks and Public Stores, and Fortifying the Town and erecting such Works for its defence, as the Honorable General Court may think necessary, and follow myself.

Apprehending that General Thomas will stand in much need of some Artillerists in Canada, I have Ordered two Companies of the Train to March immediately, and Two Mortars with some Shells and Short to be sent him.

Inclosed you have a Copy of the return of Ordinance Stores left in Boston by the Enemy. In it are not included the Cannon left at the Castle, amounting to 135 pieces as reported, all of which except a very few they have destroyed and rendered useless by breaking of the Trunnions and spiking up.

I beg leave to transmit you the Copy of a Petition from the Inhabitants of Nova Scotia, brought me by Jonathan Eddy Esquire

mentioned therein, who is now here with an Accadian.⁷¹ From this it appears, they are in a distressed situation, and from Mr. Eddy's account, are exceedingly apprehensive that they will be reduced to the disagreeable alternative of taking up Arms and Joining our Enemies, or to flee their Country, unless they can be protected against their Insults and Oppressions—he says that their Committees think many salutary and valuable consequences would be derived from five or 600 Men being sent there, as it would not only quiet the Minds of the People from the anxiety and uneasiness they are now filled with and enable them to take a part in behalf of the Colonies, but be the means of preventing the Indians (of which there are a good many) from taking the side of Government, and the Ministerial Troops from getting such Supplies of Provisions from thence as they have done.

How far these good purposes would be answered, if such a force was sent, as they ask for, is impossible to determine, in the present uncertain State of things.

For if the Army from Boston is going to Halifax, as reported by them before their departure, that or a much more considerable force would be of no avail. If not and they possess the friendly disposition to our Cause, suggested in the Petition and declared by Mr. Eddy; It might be of great service, unless another body of Troops should be sent there by Administration too powerful for them to oppose. It being a matter of some Importance, I Judged It prudent to lay it before Congress, for their consideration, and requesting their directions upon the Subject, shall only If they determine to adopt it desire that they will prescribe the Number to be sent and Whether It is to be from the Regiments which will be left here I shall wait their decision and whatever it is, will endeavour to have it carried into execution. I have the Honor etc.⁷²

71. The petitioners begged to be informed if Congress could be relied on to lend them aid in a struggle against the Government. A copy of the petition, dated Feb. 8, 1776, is in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

72. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN SULLIVAN

Cambridge, April 1, 1776.

Dear Sir: Inclosed you have a Copy of a Letter I received from Governor Cooke, to the Contents of which I refer you.

General Greene will march with his Brigade this Day for Providence, and if I find that the Enemy are at Rhode Island, I will soon join him. Governor Cooke will forward this to you, and will inform you whether this Alarm is well founded or not. If it is you must repair to Providence with the Troops under your Command. If it is not, you will proceed on your March to New York. I am, Sir, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Head Quarters, Cambridge, April 1, 1776.

Sir: An Express arrived here this Morning with a Letter from Governor Cooke of Rhode Island of which the inclosed is a Copy. In consequence of this important Intelligence I immediately dispatched an Express after General Sullivan who is on his March to Norwich with six Regiments, and ordered him to file off to Providence if he should be so desired by Governor Cooke to whom I have wrote on the Subject. General Greene was to have marched this Morning with five more Regiments by way of Providence. I have ordered him to hasten his March and hope to collect a force there sufficient to prevent the Enemy from effecting their

purpose.

Whether this movement be only a faint to draw our attention from their principal Object, or not, is at present impossible to determine. I momentarily expect further Intelligence from Governor Cooke: If the Alarm should be well grounded I shall hasten to Providence and make the necessary disposition for their reception. I beg you to assure the Honorable Congress, I shall exert myself to the utmost to frustrate the design of the Enemy. I am, Sir, etc.⁹¹

91. In the writing of William Palfrey.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL BENEDICT ARNOLD

Cambridge, April 3, 1776.

Sir: Your Favour of the 27th. February is come to Hand. I much fear you will be much disappointed in the Number of Troops you expected in that Month as the Lakes were impassable.

Major General Thomas will long before you receive this, have informed you, the Success of our Operations here. The Enemy have quitted this Harbour last Week. We have no certain Accounts

of their Destination. It is generally believed they are gone to Hallifax. If true, it is probable they will attempt to penetrate Canada on the Opening of the St. Lawrence. I hope before that happens, you will be in full Possession of Quebec, and have it's Avenues well secured; upon which depends the Fate of this Campaign in those Parts.

I have dispatch'd two companies of Colonel Knox's Regimt. of Artillery to you from hence, two Mortars &c. as you will see at Foot hereof. If any Thing else is wanting that cannot be had in Canada, and in my Power to send, they shall be forwarded with all possible Expedition, upon my being informed thereof.

The Chief Part of the Troops are march'd from hence towards New York. I will set off To-morrow. If the Enemy will not find us full Employment, and it is necessary, you may expect a Detachment from thence to your Assistance.

I am very sorry that the Gentn. of New York and other Officers should think themselves neglected in the new Arrangement. It is true that I reserved Places in this Army for those Officers who went from hence under your Command. The Congress have since informed me, that they would be provided for in the Army raised for Canada. I was not acquainted with the Gentlemen who complain, nor with their Circumstances. There is little Doubt but their Merits will

be rewarded in due Time.⁹⁷ I am very sensible of the many Difficulties you have had to encounter. Your Conduct under them does you great Honour. As General Thomas will take the Burthen off your Shoulders, I hope, you will soon gather Strength sufficient to assist in finishing the important Work you have with so much Glory to yourself, and Service to your Country, hitherto conducted. As I am informed that there is a Furnace some where near you, where Shells and Shot of any Size can be cast, I would recommend to General Thomas to have what Quantity of each that may be wanting, immediately prepared. The Roads are so very bad that it is impossible to send you any great Number of these necessary Articles from hence.

I have appointed Captain Lamb, who is Prisoner in Quebec to be second Major in the Regiment of Artillery, commanded by Colonel Henry Knox.

The Gentlemen of this Family return you their Complimts. and my best Wishes and Compliments attend General Thomas. I remain, Sir, etc.

97. The regiments sent to Canada from New York had never been included in the army under the immediate command of Washington, and for this reason they were not taken into the new

arrangement. The officers complained of this neglect, particularly as Colonel Enos and those with him, who deserted the expedition to Canada and returned home, had been promoted.— *Sparks*.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

Cambridge, April 3, 1776.

Dear Sir: I this day received your favor of the 27th Ulto. with a Letter from General Arnold.

The Enemy have quitted this Harbour last week, we have no certain account of their destination, it is generally thought they are gone to Hallifax. If this should prove true, it is probable they will attempt to penetrate into Canada, when the Communication by the River St Lawrence, is open.

By a late letter I received from Congress, I have it in Command from them, to detach four Battalions into Canada, as soon as I shall be of Opinion that the safety of New York, and the eastern service will permit, of which I cannot be a proper judge, until I have a certain Account of the place where the Enemy are returned to. I have dispatched two Companies of Artillery, two 13 Inch Mortars, and Military Stores, a List of which you have inclosed, to the Army before Quebec in the last week and if I can spare the four Battalions or more, they will go from New York, to which place the greater part of the Troops are gone from hence, I shall set out to morrow and will be very happy to see you there after my arrival, if you can be spared from your present Station, which I am sensible is a very important one.

I have no Hopes of procuring the Hard Money I gave you Expectation of, The possessors of it, are not of late accustomed to a paper Currency and keep their Gold and Silver close.

Captain Lamb⁹⁶ is appointed second Major in the Regiment of Artillery, Commanded by Colo. Henry Knox. This promotion I thought due to his Merit and Bravery. I am etc.

96. Capt. John Lamb. He was later promoted to the colonelcy of the Second Continental Artillery.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Cambridge, April 4, 1776.

Sir: I was honored with your favors of the 21st and 25th Ult^o. on the 2^d instant; the former by Mr. Hanson⁵ &ca. the latter by Fessendon.⁶ I heartily wish the money had arrived sooner, that the Militia might have been paid as soon as their time of Service expired. the disappointment has given them great uneasiness and they are gone home much dissatisfied; nor have I been without severe complaints from the other Troops on the same account. When I get to New York, I hope a sufficient sum will be there ready to pay every claim.

It is not in my power to make report of deficiency of Arms, in compliance with the direction of Congress at this Time, as some of the Regiments are at, and most of the others on their March to New York; nor do I know that It would answer any good purpose if it were, having made repeated Applications to the several Assemblies and Conventions upon the Subject, and constantly received for Answer that they could afford no relief.

When I arrive at New York I shall in pursuance of the Order of Congress, detach Four Battalions to Canada, and shall be extremely happy if they and the Troops already there can effect the Important end of their going.

In my Letter of the 1st. instant pr. post I inclosed you a Copy of a Letter from Governor Cooke, advising me of the Arrival of a Ship of War &ca. at & near the Harbour of New Port; I have now the pleasure to Inform you that the report was entirely premature and without any foundation.

5. Alexander Contee Hanson(?).

6. Josiah Fessenden was the Continental express rider.

You have a Copy of his Letter of the 1st. instant to this effect. I wish the Alarm had never been given, It occasioned General Sullivan and his Brigade to make an unnecessary and inconvenient diversion from their Route.

Inclosed is a copy of an Account presented by the Honorable General Court, for Powder furnished the Continental Army by this Colony. From the Account It appears that part of it was supplied before the Army was under my Command and therefore I know nothing of it;—But have not the smallest doubt of the Justice of the Charge. I shall leave about 200 Barrells with Major General Ward, out of which Congress will direct him to make a return, if they think proper, and also repayment of which may have been furnished by the other Governments.

A Proclamation of General Howe's, issued a few days before his departure from Boston having fallen into my hands, I have enclosed you a copy, which will probably have been the Occasion of large

Quantities of Goods being carried away and the removal of many persons, which otherwise would not have happened.⁷

Colonel Warren pay master General finding the Army likely to be removed from hence, informed me the other day, that the situation of his Affairs and engagements in the business of the Colony, are such, as to prevent him from personally attending the Army, and offered to resign in case it should be requested. This was rather embarrassing; to me It appears indispensibly necessary that the pay master General with his Books should be at or near Head Quarters; Indeed it is usual for the principal of every department in the Army, however dispersed that Army may be, to be with the Commanding General, keeping deputies in the smaller departments. On the other hand Col: Warren's merit and attachment to the Cause are such, that I could do nothing less than desire, as some Money must

7. This could hardly have been called a proclamation. It was merely a handbill notice, issued March 10, which recited that: "As Linen and Woollen goods are Articles much wanted by the Rebels, and would aid and assist them in their Rebellion, the Commander in Chief expects, that all good Subjects will use their utmost Endeavors to have all such Articles convey'd from this Place: Any who have not Opportunity to convey their Goods under their own Care, may deliver them on Board the Minerva at Hubbard's Wharf, to *Crean Brush*, Esq; marked with their Names...If after this Notice any Person secretes or keeps in his Possession such Articles, he will be treated as a Favourer of Rebels."

be left for the pay and contingent charges of the Army which will remain here, he would wait here, until Congress shall be pleased to give their Sentiments upon the matter,⁸ sending in the mean time some person in whom he could confide, with the money, (But little of which there will be to carry, tho' great the demands, as nine of the Regiments which have marched to New York, have only received £500 each, towards their pay for the Months of Feby: and March and Six others not one farthing). I hope therefore this matter will be considered by Congress and the result transmitted me as soon as done.

I would also mention to Congress, that the Militia Regiments which were last called upon, in making up their Abstracts, charged pay, the Officers from the Time they received Orders to raise Companies, and the privates from that of their respective engagements to come, or their being called upon, tho' they did not March for a considerable while after: some not within three, four, to twenty days; during which they remained at Home about their Private Affairs, without doing anything else than preparing, as they say by way of plea, for the March.

This appeared to me so exceedingly unreasonable and so contrary to Justice, that the Public should pay for a longer time than from the day of their March to that of their return, that I ordered the abstracts to be made out accordingly, and refused to give Warrants on any other Terms.

They say that the Inlisting Orders which went from their Governments give them the pay they claim⁹ —The fact may be, that some thing in them may seem to Authorize it, But I must submit it to Congress and wish for their decision whether the Continent must pay it. I am &ca.

P.S. I shall set off today.¹⁰

8. Col. James Warren resigned as Paymaster General on April 19, and Lieut. Col. William Palfrey, also of Massachusetts, was appointed as his successor on April 27.

9. On May 4 Congress resolved: "That the pay of the officers and soldiers of the militia, lately called to Cambridge, commence on the day of their march, and cease on that of their return."

10. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To COMMODORE ESEK HOPKINS

New York, April 14, 1776.

Sir: I have just received Information that the Nautilus, Sloop of War is arrived here from Newport, said to be sent Express from thence for the Asia, Phoenix and Savage and that they are intended for New London in Order to block up your Squadron in that Harbour. I thought it my Duty to give you Notice of this by Express, that you might take your Measures accordingly. The Phoenix, Savage, and Nautilus sailed this Morning. The Asia still remains in the Harbour.

I should be much obliged to you, if you would forward the Cannon and Stores, I left a List with you for, as soon as possible; and as the Men of War are now out, I should be extremely glad if you would keep a good Look out to see that the Coast is clear before any more of the Continental Troops embark from New London. I am, etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL JOHN THOMAS

New York, April 15, 1776.

Dear Sir: I am to acknowledge the Receipt of your Favour of the 7th. Inst. and cannot but express my Concern at the great Deficiency of the Regiments destin'd for Canada; but as I am sensible of the Necessity of having a respectable Body of Troops in that Country, I am now preparing to send you four of the strongest Regiments in the Service, and you may rely upon it no Time shall be lost in getting them forward as fast as possible. They will amount to about 2000 Rank and File, and will go to Albany by Water.

I have wrote General Schuyler by this Opportunity, and desired him to make the necessary Preparations for their

Subsistence, and doubt not he will speedily dispatch them to you.

I most sincerely wish you Success equal to the Importance of the Cause, and am very respectfully, Sir, etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, April 15, 1776.

Dear Sir: Previous to the Receipt of your Favour of file 7th Inst. I had been directed by the Honorable Congress to detach four Regiments to Quebec, if they could be spared from the Service here. I am very sensible of the great Necessity of sending a respectable Body of Troops immediately into that Country, and have accordingly ordered four of the strongest Regiments to hold themselves in Readiness and am providing Vessels to transport them to Albany. You may depend they shall be forwarded with all possible Dispatch. In the mean Time, I beg you would make the necessary Preperations for their Subsistence. There will be about 2000 Men exclusive of Officers in the five Regiments.

I beg you will forward the inclos'd Letter to General Thomas, and am very respectfully, Dear Sir, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, April 15, 1776.

Sir: I am now to inform you that on the 4th Instant I set out from Cambridge and arrived here on Saturday last. I came through Providence, Norwich and New London, in order to see and expedite the embarkation of the Troops. The third Brigade under the Command of General Greene was at New London, when I left it, where there was a sufficient number of Transports to embark them, and more probably would have arrived here before this, had it not been for a severe Storm on the night they sailed, which dispersed them, and I fear has done some Injury.

General Spencer with the last Brigade marched from Roxbury the day I left Cambridge, and would be at New London ready to embark in the return Transports, which brought General Sullivan's division to this place. The whole of the Troops may be reasonably expected in the course of this week; The badness of the roads & difficulties in procuring Teams for bringing the Stores, baggage &ca., have greatly prolonged their arrival here.

I have not had time since I came to look fully about me, but find many works of defence begun and some finished. The Troops are much dispersed; some on long Island, others on Staten Island &ca.

I have ordered four Battalions from hence to Canada, and am taking measures to have them forwarded to Albany by Water, with all possible expedition; This will greatly expedite their arrival and ease the men of much fatigue. I have wrote to

General Schuyler of their coming that he have necessary provisions made for hurrying their march to General Thomas.

I am informed by General Putnam that the Militia called in for the support of this Town, in case the Ministerial Army had arrived before our Troops, are all discharged, it being unnecessary to keep them longer.

All the Ships of War besides the Asia moved out of this Harbour on Saturday, and the Asia Yesterday, some of which are now below the Narrows and the rest gone to Sea.

Your favor of the 10th. Instant by Major Sherburne, directed to General Putnam or the Commanding Officer here, came to hand on Saturday evening with three Boxes of Money, which I shall deliver the Pay Master, as soon as he arrives and transmit you his receipt for the same.

Having received Information from hence before my departure from Cambridge, that thirty pieces of Heavy Cannon were wanting for the defence of this place in addition to those already here, I took the Liberty of applying to Admiral Hopkins, whom I saw at New London for that number, with the Mortars and Stores he brought from New Providence, a List of which he had transmitted you; he told

me that as many were necessary and wanted for the defence of Providence river and New London Harbour, It was uncertain whether I could have so many; But he would send me all that could be spared.¹⁶

I have not been able to get a return of the Troops since my arrival, when I do, I will send it you. I am, &ca.

16. On April 19 Congress resolved that Washington could order the artillery at New London to any place, leaving only enough to insure the safety of that town.

To JOHN ADAMS

New York, April 15, 1776.

Dr. Sir: This morning your polite Letter of the 1st instant, was delivered to me by Mr. Dana.¹⁹ I am much obliged to you for your introduction of that Gentleman, and you may rely on my showing him every Civility in my power. I have ever thought, and am still of Opinion that no terms of accommodation will be offered by the British Ministry, but such as cannot be accepted by America. We have nothing my Dear Sir, to depend upon but the protection of a kind Providence and unanimity among ourselves.

I am impressed with the deepest Gratitude for the high Honor intended me by the Congress. What ever Device may be determined upon, by the respectable committee they have chosen for that purpose will be highly agreeable to me. I have the Honor etc.

19. Francis Dana.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, April 18, 1776.

Sir: I received your Favour of the 11th. Inst In Answer to Colonel Glover's Application to you, I am of Opinion, that all Accounts respecting the armed Vessels should be paid by the Agents only; and as the Trial of the Prizes cannot be much longer deferr'd, they will have Cash, for the Goods which may be condemned, in their Hands much more than sufficient to answer the Demands upon them.

If there is not a Probability of this, you will be pleased to give a Warrant for as much as will pay the Wages due.

The Ship Jenny and the Brigantine both taken by Commodore Manley, the former from London, the latter from Antigua, bound to Boston; are by what I can learn proper Vessels to be fitted out as Cruizers. You will, therefore, Sir, have a Person of Knowledge and Trust sent on Board to examine them. If the Report of them is such as they have been represented to me, you must have them purchased for Account of the United Colonies.

If Commodore Manley is in your Neighbourhood his Opinion of them must have Weight, and if they are fit for the Purpose, he will of Course, have his Choice of them & attend the fixing one of them out. His first Lieutenant can command the Hancock in the mean Time. The sooner this is put in Execution the better.

Nothing material to inform you of from hence. I am, &c.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, April 19, 1776.

Sir: I have this Moment received a Letter from General Schuyler, containing inclosures of a very important nature.²⁵ Copies of which I imagine are contained in the inclosed Letter to you, and which I thought it my duty immediately to forward by Express, that they may be laid before the Honorable Congress and proper measures pursued, to prevent the fatal Effects which are therein apprehended. For my own part, I have done my utmost to forward the four Regiments ordered by Congress, but a variety of incidents have hitherto conspired to prevent their embarkation. The Men had scarcely recovered themselves from the fatigues of their March from Boston, and are quite unprovided with necessaries. The Colonels of the Regiments, though repeatedly call'd upon for that purpose, had neglected making out the abstracts for their pay. All obstacles however are now removed, and I hope to begin the embarkation this day. Indeed it would have been best in my Opinion, to have sent the Regiments raised in this Province and New Jersey upon that service, had not the peculiar circumstances under which they were raised, prevented it, by the Terms of their Inlistments they are to serve during the War, and at five Dollars pr month on condition (as I am informed) that they shall not be sent out of those Provinces. Besides they are very ill provided with Arms, some companies not having any.

25. This was Schuyler's letter of April 12, containing Hazen's letter of April 1. (See Washington's letter to Maj. Gen. Philip Schuyler, Apr. 19, 1776, *post.*)

It must be a great Burthen upon the Continent to keep such a number of useless men in pay, and yet if they should be dismissed, and an unexpected Supply of Arms should arrive, it may be found very difficult to replace them.

The Officers of the several Corps that have arrived here, have been so busily employed in fixing their Men in Quarters, that I have not yet been able to procure an exact return of their Numbers; some are yet behind, as soon as the whole are collected, I shall order the proper returns and transmit them to Congress.

You will please to notice what Colonel Hazen says of the disposition of the Indians; In my opinion it will be impossible to keep them in a state of Neutrality, they must, and no doubt soon will take an active part either for, or against us, and I submit it to the consideration of Congress, whether it would not be best immediately to engage them on our side, and to use our utmost endeavours to prevent their minds being poisoned by Ministerial Emmissaries, which will ever be the case while a Kings Garrison is suffered to remain in their Country. Would it not therefore, be advisable to send a sufficient force from the back Counties of Pennsylvania, to take possession of the Garrisons of Niagara and Detroit?

This I think might easily be affected and would answer the most salutary purposes. The Seneca Indians, who have hitherto appeared friendly to us, might be usefully employed in this business.

I am in hopes most of the difficulties mentioned in Col. Hazen's Letter will be obviated by the appearance of the respectable Committee of Congress in Canada, and the Forces that have been and will be sent there. The security of that Country is of the utmost importance to us. This cannot be done so effectually by Conquest, as by taking strong hold of the affections & confidence of the Inhabitants. It is to be lamented, that any conduct of the continental Troops should tend to alienate their Affections from us.

The Honorable Congress will best judge, from the Papers sent them by General Schuyler, and the information they may receive of the designs of the Enemy, whether it is expedient to send a further reinforcement to Canada. If such should be their determination, I stand ready to execute their orders, and am with respect, Sir, etc.

P.S. Inclosed is a return of the four Regiments ordered to Canada, besides which there will be one Rifle Company, a Company of Artificers and two Engineers, the whole to be commanded by Brigadier General Thompson.²⁶

26. The draft is in the writing of William Palfrey.

***To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS**

New York, April 18, 1776.

Sir: Permit me through you, to convey to the honorable Congress the Sentiments of gratitude I feel for the high honor they have done me, in the public mark of approbation, contain'd in your favour of the 2d. Instant, which came to hand last Night.²¹ I beg you to assure them, that, it will ever be my highest ambition to approve myself a faithful Servant of the Public; and that, to be in any degree instrumental in procuring to my American Brethren a restitution of their just rights and Priviledges, will constitute my chief happiness.

Agreeable to your request, I have communicated in General Orders to the Officers and Soldiers under my Command, the thanks of Congress for their good behaviour in the Service; and am happy in having such an oppertunity of doing justice to their Merit.

They were indeed, at first, "a band of undisciplined Husbandmen," but it is (under God) to their bravery and attention to their duty, that I am indebted for that success which has procured me the only reward I wish to receive; the affection and esteem of my Countrymen.

The Medal, intended to be presented to me by your honorable Body, I shall carefully preserve as a Memorial of their regard.²² I beg to leave to return you Sir my warmest thanks for the polite manner in which you have been pleased to express their Sentiments of my Conduct, and am with sincere esteem etc.

21. Hancock's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

22. Washington's letter of March 19, informing Congress of the occupation of Boston by the American forces, was read in Congress March 25, and it was that day resolved: "That the thanks of this Congress, in their own name, and in the name of the Thirteen United Colonies, whom they represent, be presented to his excellency General Washington, and the officers and soldiers under

his command, for their wise and spirited conduct in the siege and acquisition of Boston; and that a medal of gold be struck in commemoration of this great event, and presented to his Excellency; and that a committee of three be appointed to prepare a letter of thanks, and a proper device for the medal." This letter was signed and sent to Washington by Hancock, April 2. The committee chosen consisted of John Adams, John Jay, and Stephen Hopkins.

The medal was not completed and sent to Washington until 1786 or later. It was struck in Paris and shows a beautifully modeled profile of Washington on the obverse, encircled by the inscription: "Georgio Washington Svpremo Dvci Exercitvum Adsertori Libertatis Comitia Americana." On the reverse is the town of Boston in the distance, with a fleet in view under sail. Washington and his officers are on horseback in the foreground, and he is pointing to the ships as they depart from the harbor. The inscription is, "Hostibus Primo Fvgatis Bostonivm Recpveratvm XVII Martii MDCCLXXVI."

The medal became the property of George Steptoe Washington, a son of Samuel Washington, who was a younger brother of the General. From him it passed to his eldest son, Dr. Samuel Walter Washington, and on his death to his widow, who gave it to her only son, George Lafayette Washington. In 1876 it was purchased from his widow by a few citizens of Boston and presented to the city, to be preserved in the Boston Public Library. A profile of Washington taken from this medal appears as the bastard-title page of each volume of this work. A full history of the medal is in Loubat's *Medallic History of the United States*.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, April 19, 1776.

Dear Sir: Yours of the 12th Inst. from Fort George was delivered me (with the Inclosures) Yesterday by Express. I agree with you that the Intelligence is very alarming and requires the strictest Attention.²⁷

The four Regiments ordered from hence are now embarking, and I hope, will soon be with you. I need not urge the Necessity of forwarding them from Albany with all possible Dispatch. You will have with the Troops five hundred Barrells of Provisions. The Commissary General expects every Moment a large Quantity from Connecticut, and what can be spared of it shall be sent to you in the same Bottoms without Delay. What General Lee contracted for is not yet delivered. His sudden and unexpected Departure to the Southward, left the Contractors at a Loss where to deliver the

Provisions, and apply for the Pay. The Commissary General has since renewed the Contract, and ordered them to send the Provisions here.

I have ordered a Return to be made of the State of our Magazine; and if the Powder you request, can possibly be spared, you shall have it.

I have wrote to Congress to know whether they would incline to send you a further Reinforcement of Men; but we are yet in a very uncertain Situation, not knowing where the Enemy may bend their Force, and constant Applications from all Quarters of the Sea Coast for a Supply of Men and Ammunition.

The Recruits that have been lately raised here, are totally unfurnished with Arms, and what is still worse, we do not know where to procure them.

You, who know the Temper and Disposition of the Savages, will, I doubt not, think with me, that it will be impossible to keep them in a State of Neutrality. I have urged to Congress the Necessity of engaging them on our Side, to prevent their taking an active Part against us, which would be a most fatal Stroke under our present Circumstances.

The

27. When General Wooster left Montreal for Quebec (March 27) the command of the former place devolved on Col. Moses Hazen, who wrote to General Schuyler (April 1): "You are not unacquainted with the friendly disposition of the Canadians, when General Montgomery first penetrated into the country; the ready assistance which they gave on all occasions, by men, carriages, or provisions, was most remarkable. Even when he was before Quebec, many parishes offered their services in the reduction of that fortress, which were at that time thought unnecessary, But his most unfortunate fate, added to other incidents, has caused such a change in their disposition, that we no longer look upon them as friends, but on the contrary waiting an opportunity to join our enemies. That no observations of my own may remain obscure, I beg leave to observe, that I think the clergy, or guardians of the souls and conductors of the bodies of these enthusiasts, have been neglected, perhaps in some instances ill-used, Be that as it will, they are unanimous, though privately, against our cause, and I have too much reason to fear many of them, with other people of some consequence, have carried on a correspondence the whole winter with General Carleton in Quebec, and are now plotting our destruction. The peasantry in general have been ill. used. They have, in some instances. been dragooned with the point of the bayonet to supply wood for the garrison at a lower rate than the current price. For carriages and many other articles furnished, certificates have been given not legible, without signature, the one half of consequence rejected by

the quartermaster-general. It is true, payment has been promised from time to time; yet they look upon such promises as vague, their labor and property lost, and the Congress or United Colonies bankrupt. And in a more material point, they have not seen sufficient force in the country to protect them, These matters furnish very strong arguments to be made use of by our enemies. With respect to the better sort of people, both French and English, seven eighths are Tories, who would wish to see our throats cut, and perhaps would readily assist in doing it."

A contemporary copy of this letter is in the *Washington Papers*; it was inclosed in Schuyler's letter to Washington, April 12.

Comotions among the Canadians is really alarming. I am afraid proper Measures have not been taken to conciliate their Affections; but rather that they have been insulted and injured, than which nothing could have a greater Tendency to ruin our Cause in that Country. For human Nature is such that it will adhere to the Side from whence the best Treatment is received. I, therefore, conjure you, Sir, to recommend to the Officers and Soldiers in the strongest Terms to treat all the Inhabitants Canadians, English, and Savages with Tenderness and Respect paying them punctually for what they receive, or giving them such Certificates as will enable them to receive their Pay.

As you are perfectly well acquainted with the Country and it's Inhabitants in and about Albany, I think it would be best for you to remain there, at least untill the Troops and all their Supplies are forwarded from thence to Canada. Besides the four Regiments order'd for that Service, I shall send a Company of Rifle-Men, a Company of Artificers, and two Engineers.

I beg you will continue to furnish me with Intelligence of every interesting Occurrence, and believe me most affectionately, etc.

To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

New York, April 20, 1776.

Sir: By the returns just delivered me of the state of our Ammunition, I find we are greatly deficient in the Article of Ball; and as I understand a large quantity of lead has been manufactured at Middletown, in your Government, I must beg the favor of you to forward as much as you can spare to me, as soon as possible. I am, etc.

P.S. As the quantity of powder here is much smaller than I expected, and the demand from Canada greater, I should be obliged to you if you would inform me how that has been disposed of which was said to be imported lately into your Government on Continental account.²⁸

28. The text is from the Toner Transcripts in the Library of Congress.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK

April 20, 1776.

Gentn.: I thank you for the polite and ready attention you paid to my requisition of the 17th Inst., when the Civil and Military Powers Co-operate, and afford mutual Aid to each other, there can be little doubt of things going well. I have now to request the favor of your information, in what manner and in what time, a Body of 2000 or 2500 Militia, might be collected from this Colony for actual service, upon a sudden Emergency.

Although we may not, and I trust in God shall not have occasion for their Aid; common prudence does nevertheless dictate the expediency of a preconcerted Plan for calling them in, that in case of necessity they may be drawn together in proper Corps, without tumult or disorder, and at the same time with the utmost expedition. This will not be the case, if men are not regularly embodied and notified that they are to step forth at a moment's warning.

The Idea that strikes me, as the properest to be pursued at present, is, to establish out of the Continental Forces good look outs on the Heights and Head Lands at the Entrance of the Harbour, who, upon the appearance of a Fleet, shall make signals, as being answered from Place to Place, shall convey the earliest intelligence to Head Quarters, of the strength and approach of the Enemy. These Signals for greater certainty, to be followed by expresses, and then in case any thing formidable should appear, for the Committee of Safety, if sitting; if not, those to whom the power shall be delegated, upon application from the Commanding officer of the Continental Forces, to order in two or more Battalions, as the exigency of the case may require, or for greater dispatch such Militia or part of them as shall be allotted to this Service by the Committee, might be assembled, if in the Town or

Vicinity, by Signals to be agreed on.

A mode of proceeding of a similar kind, concerted with Jersey would bring in a reinforcement speedily and without those irregularities and unnecessary Expences, which but too frequently attend the movement of Militia.

Thus Gentlemen, I have express'd my sentiments to you upon the occasion. Your prudence will suggest to you the necessity of adopting these or other methods of a like nature and your wisdom will point out the most effectual and expeditious manner of carrying them into Execution. I therefore submit them to your consideration, and am with great respect etc.

To BENJAMIN HARRISON, JOHN ADAMS, AND WILLIAM WHIPPLE

New York, April 22, 1776.

Gentlemen: I received your favor of the 14th. instant and Judging Col. Richard Gridley and Col. Henry Knox, to be as proper persons as any I was acquainted with, have wrote the former to view the Harbour Fortifications &ca. at Cape Ann, the Latter, those of New London, if not come from thence; Inclosing each a Copy of your Letter for their Instructions, and enjoining a clear and full report to be made me, which I shall do myself the honor of transmitting you, as soon as It comes to hand.

I return you my thanks for your Polite congratulations on my safe arrival here, and am very respectfully, Your &ca.

***To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS**

New York, April 23, 1776.

Sir: In a Letter which I had the honour to receive from Congress some considerable time ago, they were pleased to ask what Rank aid de Camps bore in the Army, from whence I concluded that they had adverted to the extraordinary trouble and confinement of these Gentlemen with a view to make them an adequate allowance; but nothing being since done, or said of the matter, I take the liberty unsolicited by, and unknown to my aid de Camps to inform your Honorable body, that their pay is not, by any means, equal to their trouble and confinement.⁴³

No person wishes more to save money to the public than I do; nor no person has aim'd more at it; but there are some cases in which parsimony may be ill placed; and this I take to be one. Aid de Camps are persons in whom entire Confidence must be placed.

43. On April 26 Congress resolved that the pay of the aides-de-camp to the Commander in Chief be raised to \$40 a month; it had formerly been \$33.

It requires men of Abilities to execute the duties with propriety and dispatch, where there is such a multiplicity of business as must attend the Commander in Chief of such an Army as our's; and perswaded I am, that nothing but the zeal of those Gentlemen who live with me and act in this capacity, for the great American Cause and personal attachment to me, has induced them to undergo the trouble and confinement they have experienced since they became members of my Family.

I give into no kind of amusements myself, consequently those about me can have none, but are confined from Morn' 'till Eve hearing, and answering the applications and Letters of one and another; which will now, I expect, receive a pretty considerable addition as the business of the Northern and Eastern departments (if I continue here) must, I suppose, pass through my hands. If these Gentlemen had the same relaxation from duty as other Officers have in their common Rotine, there would not be so much in it, but to have the Mind always upon the stretch, scarce ever unbent, and no hours for recreation, makes a material odds; knowing this, and at the same time how inadequate the pay is, I can scarce find Inclination to impose the necessary duties of their Office upon them. To what I have here said, this further remark may be made, and is a matter of no small concernment to me, and in its consequences to the publick, and that is, that while the duty is hard and the pay small it is not to be wondered at if there should be found a promptness in them to seek preferment, or in me to do justice to them, by facilitating their views, by which means I must loose their aid when they have it most in their power to assist me. Influenced by these motives, I have taken

the liberty of laying the Matter fully and with all due deference, before your Honorable body, not doubting its meeting with a patient hearing. I am &ca.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, April 22, 1776.

Sir: I was this day honored with the receipt of your favor of the 20th. Instant. I have now the pleasure to acquaint you, that the four Regiments designed for Canada embarked yesterday, with a fair Wind for Albany, under the Command of Colonels Greaton, Patterson, Bond and Poor; besides which there was a Company of Rifle Men, a Company of Artificers, and two Engineers, the whole Commanded by Brigadier General Thompson.

I have repeatedly mentioned to the Honorable Congress the distressful situation we are in for want of Arms; with much pains and Difficulty. I got most of the Regiments from the Eastward tolerably well furnished, but find the York Regiments very badly provided. Colonel Ritzema's has scarcely any, and yet these men being inlisted during the War and at five Dollars pr. month, ought not (in my judgment) to be discharged, as we find it almost as difficult to get Men as Arms. This is a matter of some importance, which I should be glad to receive the particular Opinion of Congress upon.³⁰

Mr. Baldwin³¹ is one of the Assistant Engineers ordered to Canada. He is indeed a very useful man in his Department, but declined the Service on Account of his pay which he says is inadequate to his support. In order to induce him to continue, I promised to represent his case to Congress and would recommend an increase of his pay, and that

30. On April 26 Congress resolved: "That none of the troops already raised, be, for the present, disbanded for want of arms."

31. Jeduthan Baldwin.

they would make provision for him accordingly.³²

A few days ago application was made to me by the Committee of Safety for this Colony, for an Exchange of Prisoners, for the particulars I beg leave to refer you to their Letter, a Copy of which you have inclosed. As there is a standing Order of Congress, that no Sailors or Soldiers shall be exchanged for Citizens, I did not incline to comply with their requests without the particular direction of Congress; but I have since been informed that the Prisoners mentioned in the Committees Letter, as Citizens, axe really Seamen taken from private Vessels, but not in Arms.—How far this may alter the Case, or how far the reasons which induced the Congress to pass the resolve above mentioned may still exist, must be left to their determination.

The Militia, which on my application were ordered to this place to keep possession until I should arrive with the Continental Troops, were obliged to return home without their pay, as there was not then Money sufficient in the Treasury for that purpose, and to answer the Exigencies of the Army;

this occasioned great uneasiness among them and may be attended with very bad consequences, in case we should have occasion for their service on any future emergency; I therefore beg the Congress would make provision for their pay, and point out particularly, whether it is to be done by the Commander of the Continental Forces, or by the Provincial Assemblies or Conventions from whence they are sent.

As the Time for which the Rifle Men inlisted, will expire on the first of July next, and as the loss of such a valuable and brave body of Men will be of great injury to the Service; I would submit it to the Consideration of Congress whether it would not be best to adopt some method to induce them to continue. They are indeed a very useful Corps,

32. This recommendation was successful, and Baldwin, by a resolve of April 26, was allowed "the pay and rank of lieutenant colonel on the Continental establishment."

but I need not mention this as their importance is already well known to the Congress. It is necessary they should pay an early attention to this matter, as we know from past experience that Men are very slow in reinlisting.³³

When I had the Honor of seeing Admiral Hopkins at New London, he represented to me the weak State of his Fleet occasioned by Sickness and the damage he received in his Engagement with the Enemy,³⁴ and requested I would spare him 200 Men, to assist him in a design he had formed of attacking Wallace; This I readily consented to, and the Men are to be returned as soon as the Service is performed.

I wish it was in my power at present to furnish General Lee, with the Companies of Artillery he desires.³⁵ I have already sent two Companies to Quebec and I have not yet been able to procure a return of those that are here. I expect Colonel Knox every Moment and then shall be able to determine, whether any can be spared from hence.³⁶ Blankets we are in great want of ourselves, and it was with great difficulty a few could be procured for the Rifle Men ordered for Canada.

I inclose you Mr. Winthrops receipt for two hundred thousand dollars brought sometime ago from Philadelphia by Major Sherburne,³⁷ which you will please to deliver to the Continental Treasurers.

On my arrival here, I found that Mr. Livingston had been appointed by the Provincial Congress a Commissary to furnish the Continental Troops stationed in this City with Provisions. I suppose this

was done because there was no Continental commissary then on the Spot; Mr. Livingston³⁸ still claims a right of furnishing all the Troops, but those lately arrived from Cambridge.

Mr. Trumbull is now here,

33. The companies of riflemen raised in Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia by order of Congress were by the terms of their enlistment to serve one year unless sooner discharged. Congress authorized their reenlistment with a bounty of a month's pay in advance for two years' service, unless sooner discharged.

34. The encounter took place off Block Island and Hopkins was worsted. "The Nautilus, Capt. Collins, came in here the 11th inst., and brings an account from Captain Wallace's squadron at Rhode Island, that on the 6th. inst. an engagement happened between the Glasgow and the five ships of the Continental fleet." (See letter of Governor Tryon to Lord George Germain, Apr. 15, 1776, in *Documents Relative to Colonial History of New York*, vol. 8, p. 675.)

35. Lee had asked Congress for a company of artillery, and Congress (April 19) referred his request to Washington.

36. At the request of the Governor of Rhode Island, Colonel Knox had gone to Newport for the purpose of giving advice respecting the erection of works of defense at that place.— *Sparks*.

37. Maj. Henry Sherburne, of the Fifteenth Continental Infantry.

38. Walter Livingston, deputy commissary general of the Northern Department, and later, one of the firm of Comfort Sands & Co., contractors for supplying the main army. He became one of the Continental Board of Treasury.

and as I consider him, as the Principal in that Office, I should be glad to know whether any part of the Continental Troops are to be furnished by any other than their Commissary General. I must needs say, that to me it appears very inconsistent, and must create great confusion in the Accounts as well as in the Contracts. I intended to have laid before Congress the Amount of the Rations as supplied by Colonel Trumbull and Mr. Livingston, and called upon those Gentlemen, to furnish me with a separate estimate for that purpose. Colonel Trumbull has given me his by which it appears he supplies the Troops at 8¹/₂d per ration. I have not yet received any from Mr. Livingston, but am informed his Contract is at 10¹/₂d. The difference is immense as it will amount to no less than 200£ per day for 20,000 men. It is indeed to be considered that Mr. Livingston's contract includes every other charge, and that to Mr. Trumbull's must be added store hire, Clerks and every other

Contingent Expence, but even then it will not amount to so much as Mr. Livingston's, by a penny per Ration which in the Gross will be something very considerable.

I thought it my Duty, without prejudice or partiality to state the matter fairly to Congress that they might take such order upon it as to them shall seem necessary. I cannot however in Justice to Mr. Trumbull help adding, that he has been indefatigable in supplying the Army, and I believe from his Connection in New England, is able to do it on as good Terms as any person in America.

The several matters contained in the foregoing, I must beg the early attention of Congress to, and that I may be favored with an Answer as soon as possible.³⁹ I have the Honor to be etc.⁴⁰

39. This letter was read in Congress on April 25; referred to R. H. Lee, John Alams, and Joseph Hewes; and a report on this and Washington's letter of April 23 was rendered on April 26. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*, Apr. 26, 1776.)

40. In the writing of William Palfrey.

To THE LEGISLATURE OR COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW JERSEY⁴⁶

New York, April 24, 1776.

Sir: The readiness shewn by the Committee of Safety for the Province of New Jersey, to succour this Place with their Militia on a late occasion, when they were at my request called upon by Brigadier General, The Earl of Stirling, and the alacrity with which I am informed the Militia then stepped forward in defence of their Country, are sufficient proofs of the Important Service the Province of New Jersey, is capable of rendering in support of the great Cause of American Liberty; especially, if the Militia of that Province be put under such regulations, as will enable them to give their aid at the very time it may be wanted and without the least delay possible. What renders such a regulation the more necessary is, that in the present Situation of Affairs, it is more than probable that the approach of the Enemy will be sudden and without our having long notice of their being on the Coast; late Experience has taught us, that under the present Regulation, it

46. The letter was addressed to Samuel Tucker as "President of the Congress of New Jersey or the Chairman of the Committee of Safety of that Province."

will take at least a fortnight (after the necessity of the requisition is seen) to Assemble and embody, any considerable Detachment of the Militia, whereof it seems absolutely necessary that there be a

resolution of your Congress or Committee of Safety, for allotting a particular number of your Militia to March on the first Notice of the approach of the Enemy; the Detachment from each Regiment should be fixed upon, who should March to certain places of rendezvous, on the first Alarm by regulated signals. A Regulation of Signals was lately made by Lord Stirling, for the Highlands of Neversinks and Staten Island, a Copy of which, with some Alterations I now send you, and which I think are very proper for the purpose; the two last of which should be repeated at a number of Eminences in your province. And if on the Signal of the appearance of a large Fleet, the Detachments of your Militia were ordered to Rendezvous at Brunswick, Amboy, Woodbridge, Raway, Elizabeth Town, Newark and Bergen; they might be ready in a day or two, to march to such a Place, either in your Province or in this, as would be found to stand most in need of their Assistance; And in order to avoid the Inconveniencies which may arise from the Absence of your provincial Generals, from that part of the Country where the Troops may Assemble, it will be necessary, that the Colonels and Commanding Officers of every Corps or Detachment be directed, strictly to obey, the Orders they may receive from the Continental General, to whom that Department may be allotted, with Respect I am etc.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK

New York, April 24, 1776.

Gentn: It being necessary, that I should know the number of Troops to compose the Army here, I must request the favor of your Honble. body, to inform me, how many Regiments are raising in this Province for the Continental Service, by order of Congress, and what their state is, as to Men and Arms. From the Accounts I have had, I have reason to fear there is a great deficiency in the latter; which at a Crisis, when nothing else seems left to decide the Contest we are engaged in, is truly Alarming and calls aloud on every power for their utmost exertions to procure them. The pleasing and ready assurances I have received from you, to co-operate with me, in every measure advancive of the Common Cause, leave me no room to doubt, but proper steps will be pursued for obtaining them, and lead me to ask, what expectations and Source you have for getting a Supply.

If there have been any officers commission'd by you, I shall be obliged by having a list of their appointments.

I have been informed that there is a Number of Arms at Kingston, that were taken from the Tories in Dutchess County; If so, are they not at your disposal and can they be had? I am &c.

To COMMODORE ESEK HOPKINS

New York, April 25, 1776.

Sir: I wrote you the 14th. Inst., giving Information of the sailing from this Harbour, of the Phoenix, Savage, and Nautilus Men of War; which, I apprehended were designed to join Wallace in Order to block up the Fleet under your Command. The latter Part I since find to be groundless, as they have returned, and I find they make a Practice of stretching off from and soon returning to this Port. This convinces me that they are in Expectation of a Fleet and I are preparing for their Reception.

I expected to have met here a Force much superior to what I have found it. I was obliged to lessen it by detaching four of our strongest Battallions to Canada which lays me under the Necessity of requesting you to dispatch to this Place as soon as possible the 200 Men lent you from this Army that they may join their respective Corps, which are much weakened by their Absence. I am, etc.

P.S. Inclosed is a Copy of two Resolves of Congress respecting the Cannon and Stores &c.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, April 24, 1776.

Sir: I have this Day granted a Warrant unto Captain Jacobus Wynkoop for two Hundred seventy six and two thirds Dollars, being for a Months Advance to him, his Officers & Men, who are to serve on the Lakes at the Rates following,

Captain—32 Dollrs. 32

Three Mates 15 do 45.

One Boatswain 15 do 15

Two Boatswain Mates 9 18

Twenty Seamen @ 8 160

One do @ 6 6

276□ Dollars.

which you will please to take Notice of in adjusting the Accts. of this Captain and his Crew.

Brigadier General Thompson with four Battalions and one Company sailed from hence last Sunday. I hope they will have reach'd Albany long before this and I doubt not your forwarding them on with all possible Expedition. We have Accounts of the British Troops under General Howe being arrived at Hallifax. A Part of them if not the whole, will probably attempt the Relief of Quebeck, as soon as the Navigation up the St. Lawrence is practicable. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, April 25, 1776.

Sir: Last Evening's post brought a Letter from Joshua Wentworth Esqr. of Portsmouth who I had appointed Agent for our little Fleet in that Province, it is dated the 15th inst, an extract from which I have the Honor of transcribing for your perusal.

The 3d. Instant, Comr. Manly brought in the Brigantine Elizabeth, one of the 3d Division, which sailed from Nantasket, with a valuable cargo of English Goods, and a few hhds. of Rum & Sugar; A Mr. Jackson, who was Passenger and part freighter, *and a very Tory*, supposes the Cargo worth twenty Thousand pounds Sterling. Those Goods are the greater part owned by the late Inhabitants of Boston, and by some that were Inhabitants when the Troops left it; The residue by this Mr. Jackson and others of the same cast. The complicate state of this prize, required my immediate setting off for Boston, expecting I might find some directions for my Government there; when I waited on General Ward, who was obliging enough to give me his opinion (but not able to direct, having received no Instruction to the point) that the Vessel and Cargo must be libeled, and a dividend to the Captors would follow, of all such Goods as might be legally claimed by the friends to America, and those that were the property, of them inimical, might be deemed forfeited. Upon further enquiry I was informed a resolve passed in Congress; That all Vessels and Goods retaken, previous to a Condemnation by a British Court of Admiralty, were liable to a partial decree (by every Colony Judge) to the Captors, not more than one third, nor less than a Quarter; the present Prize falls under this resolve; and any other that may be property of our Internal Enemies, liable to a full confiscation, may be necessary for my Government; Therefore shall be much obliged by your full direction of this Capture, and a Copy of the Continental resolves thereon. This Brigantine is owned by a Mr. Richard Hart of this Town, taken on her return from the West Indies, last October and carried into Boston,

not condemned. The Rum on Board is Seventeen Hhds. and some of Sugar, not removed out of her from the time of Capture.—The other Cargo, was in General stolen, by virtue of General Howe's Proclamation (which undoubtedly you have seen) appointing one Crean Brush Superintendant, who by the way was taken in the prize, and is now confined in the Massachusetts Colony, with Mr. Jackson and sundry others, by order of the General Court, to whom General Ward delivered them.

There were a Sergeant and twelve privates of the 4th or Kings own Regt. taken prisoners on board with the others, making Sixty three Souls, among whom are four Negroes (two men and two women) which I have confined in Gaol here, concluding they may be Esteemed a part of the prize. There appeared from the Pillage of this Cargo, (by many of the Passengers) the Property was in him that could secret the most, for when examining the chests and bedding of the Prisoners, I found great Quantities of Goods that they had collected while on board, which were taken out of Ware houses without packing, and have promiscuously on board the Vessel, even the Sailors had provided for their disposal at pleasure; In fact the destruction of Property, under cover of General Howe's Proclamation, is unparralled. I thought it my Duty to be critical in examining for cash which rendered it necessary to insist on a close scrutiny, and found about one hundred pounds Lawful money. (Viz) £36.18.7d. on Mr. Jackson, and £62.16/ on a Mr. Keighley, likewise one hundred and fifty nine pounds 1/9d. of Mr. Jackson in five sets of Exchange, which I now have in Possession, considering, that a man so inimical to his Country, ought to be dispossessed of any Interest, whereby he could be benefited, added to which they are Navy Bills, except £60 which was the draft of Governor Wentworth; On this point should be obliged by your opinion and direction.

I am now discharging the Cargo as it is in a perishing situation, and when selected, and the regular course, pursued through the Admiralty, shall advertise, agreeable to His Excellencys Instruction to General Ward, who was obliging enough to give me an Abstract. The General Court of this Province finding a dificulty in making a Code of Laws for the Admiralty Court, did not complete that Institution their last Session, when they adjourned to June; which elapse of time will not admit my facilitating the disposal of the prizes under my care, so early as I could wish for the safety of part of the Interest of the Susanna, viz. the Porter, which I fear may be spoiled by laying, it not having equal Body, to that commonly imported for sale, which induces me to desire your direction for a disposal of that Article either at Private or Public Sale.⁵²

That Sir is an exact Copy of part of Mr. Wentworth's Letter to Mr. Moylan. I now request

52. The original of the Wentworth letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

you will please to direct me, in what manner I shall instruct the Agent respecting this complicated cargo, and whether he may be empowered to dispose of the porter, or any other articles on board the prizes in his care, which the delay of establishing the Court of Admiralty, may make liable to perish.

I have not yet heard that there has been any Trial of the prizes carried into Massachusetts Bay, this procrastination is attended with very bad consequences, some of the Vessels I had fitted out, are now laid up, Crews being dissatisfied that they cannot get their prize Money.

I have tired the Congress upon this Subject, but the importance of it makes me again mention, that if a summary way of proceeding is not resolved on, it will be impossible to get our Vessels maned. I must also mention to you Sir, that Capt: Manly and his Crew, are desirous to know when they may expect their part of the value of the Ordinance Stores taken last fall, they are anxious to know what the amount may be; as the Inventory of that Cargo is in the Hands of Congress, I would humbly submit it to them, whether a valuation thereof should not be made, and the Captor's dividend be remitted them, as soon as possible, it will give them Spirit and encourage them to be alert in looking out for other prizes. Several officers belonging to the Regiments raised in these Middle Colonies, inform me, that their Men (notwithstanding their agreement) begin to murmur at the distinction of pay made between them and the Regiments from the Eastward. I would be glad that the Congress would attend to this in time, least it may get to such a pitch

as will make it difficult to suppress, they argue that they perform the same duty, undergo the same fatigue,—and receive five Dollars, when the Eastern Regiments receive 6^d: Dollars per Month.⁵³ — for my own part I wish they were all upon the same footing, for if the British Army will not face this way it will be necessary to detach a great part of our Troops; in that case I would for many reasons, be sorry there should be any distinction of Regiments that are all in pay of the United Colonies, the Deficiency of Arms (in the New York Regiments especially) is very great, if I am rightly informed, there are scarce as many in Colonel Ritzema's Regiment as will arm one Company. Can the Congress remedy this evil? if they can, there should not a Moment be lost in effecting it as our strength at present is in reality on paper only; should we think of discharging those men who are without Arms, the remedy would be worse than the disease, for by vigorous exertions, I hope Arms may be procured, and I well know that the raising Men is exceeding difficult; especially to be engaged during the continuance of the War, which is the footing on which Col. Ritzema's Regiment is engaged.

April 26.

I had wrote thus far, before I was honored with your favor of the 23d Instant; in obedience to the order therein contained, I have directed six Regiments more, for Canada,⁵⁴ which will embark as soon as Vessels and other necessaries can be provided;

53. On April 23 Congress had considered the report of a committee on letters from Generals Washington and Schuyler regarding Canada and had resolved: "That if any of the troops from New Jersey or Pennsylvania, which were raised at five dollars a month, be sent to Canada, they shall be allowed at the rate of six dollars and two thirds of a dollar per month, from the time they begin their march."

54. President Hancock's letter inclosed the resolves of Congress of April 23.

these Regiments will be Commanded by General Sullivan; I will give him instructions to join the Forces, in that Country under General Thomas as soon as possible.

With respect to sending more Troops to that Country I am really at a Loss, what to advise, as it is impossible at present, to know the designs of the Enemy.⁵⁵ Should they send the whole force under General Howe up the River St. Lawrence to relieve Quebec and recover Canada, the Troops gone and now going will be insufficient to stop their progress, and should they think proper to send that or an equal force this way from Great Britain, for the purpose of possessing this City and securing the navigation of Hudson River, the Troops left here will not be sufficient to oppose them, and yet for any thing we know, I think it not improbable they may attempt both, both being of the greatest importance to them if they have men.

I should wish indeed that the Army in Canada, should be more powerfully reinforced; at the same time, I am conscious that the trusting this important post (which is now become the Grand Magazine of America to the handful of men remaining here, is tuning too great a risque: The securing this post and Hudsons River is to us also, of so great importance that I can not at present advise the sending any more Troops from hence; on the Contrary the General Officers now here, whom I thought it my Duty to consult, think it absolutely necessary to encrease the Army at this place, with at least 10,000 men, especially when it is considered that from this place only the Army in Canada must draw its supplies of Ammunition, Provisions and most probably of men; That all reinforcements can be sent from hence much easier than from any other place. By the inclosed return you will see the state of the Army here, and that the number of effective men, is far short of what the Congress must have expected.⁵⁶

55. Congress in its resolves of April 23 had requested the opinion of General Washington whether it was necessary to send more troops to Canada and whether he could with safety spare them from the army at New York.

56. A general return of the Continental Army, dated Apr. 23, 1776, is copied in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*, No. 169.

I have found it necessary to order Colonel Dayton's Regiment from New Jersey to march as one of the Six to Canada. Wherefore I must recommend it to Congress, to order two Companies of one of the Regiments still in Pennsylvania to March to Cape May, which can be done much sooner,⁵⁷ for had this destination of that Regiment not taken place, it would have been very inconvenient to have detached two Companies from it to that place, as the march would (according to Lord Sterling's and other Accounts) have been at least 200 miles from Amboy, and they must have passed within 20 miles of Philadelphia, there being no practicable road along the Sea Coasts of New Jersey for their Baggage to have passed.

Doctor Potts⁵⁸ who is bearer hereof, was I understood appointed director of the Hospital for these Middle Colonies, but the army being removed with the General Hospital from the Eastward, does in course supersede him, he is inclined to go to Canada, where he may be very useful, if a person is not already appointed for that Department, I humbly beg leave to ask the Congress, Whether in all those Appointments, it would not be best, to have but one chief, to whom all the others should be subordinate? I have the Honor etc.⁵⁹

57. On April 17 Congress had ordered two companies of Col. Elias Dayton's regiment to proceed to Cape May, N. J., and remain there till further orders.

58. Dr. Jonathan Potts. He was appointed director general of the hospital of the Northern Department.

59. In the writing of Stephen Moylan.

To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

New York, April 26, 1776.

Sir: When you did me the honor of a Visit at Norwich, on my way to this Place, I communicated to you the recommendation I had received from Congress, for sending four Battalions from hence, to reinforce the Troops in Canada. I now beg leave to inform you, that, in compliance therewith, on Saturday and Sunday last, I detached four Regiments thence, under the Command of Brigadier Genl. Thompson; and, by an express received last night, am Ordered by Congress, in addition to those already gone, to send Six more immediately.⁶² Our Regiments being incomplete and much wanting in numbers, I need not add, that the Army here felt a sensible diminution from this detachment; and, when the second is gone,

62. Washington wrote to Col. William Irvine, of the Sixth Pennsylvania Regiment: "Immediately upon receipt of this Letter you are desired to march the Remainder of your Battalion directly to this City, in order to embark for Albany on your Rout to Canada." Irvine was to inform his men that Congress had augmented their pay to \$6 a month.

will be weak indeed, considering the Importance of this place, the many extensive posts which must be guarded for its defence, and, added to this, almost the whole of our Valuable Ordinance, Stores, and Magazines will be deposited here. For these reasons, It appears to me expedient, that some mode should be adopted, without loss of time by this, your, and the Jersey, Government, for throwing in immediate succours, upon the appearance of the Enemy or any case of emergency. I have wrote to the Congress of New Jersey upon the subject, praying them to form such regulations respecting their Militia, (they being the only resource we have), that Assistance may be had on the earliest Notice of an approach by the Enemy, for preventing the fatal and alarming consequences, which might result from the common, tedious and slow method generally used for obtaining their Aid; and would take the liberty of mentioning, that, if the same should be done by you and your Honble. Council, respecting your Militia, or such part of them, as are most contiguous to this Place, that the most salutary ends might be derived there from. The benefits flowing from a timely Succour being too obvious for repetition; I shall propose, with all possible deference, for your consideration, whether it will not be advisable to have some select Corps of Men appointed, under proper Officers, in the Western Parts of your Government, to repair to this place, on the earliest notice from the General or Officer Commanding here, of the appearance of an Enemy. If it should be thought

necessary, upon an emergency, in the first instance to resort to you, and for all the ordinary forms to be gone thro', before any succours can be ordered in, It is to be feared that the relief would be too late to answer any good purposes. This, however, I shall submit to you, in full confidence of your most ready assistance on every occasion, and that such measures, as appear to you most likely to advance the public good, in this and every instance will be most chearfully adopted. I am, etc.

TO THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK

New York, April 27, 1776.

Gentn.: In answer to your favor of the 25th. delivered to me yesterday, I shall beg leave to inform you, that it was my design to have included the Militia of this City, in the 2000 or 2500 Men, which I thought might be wanted upon an emergency; but whether common prudence may not dictate the expediency, of extending your views to a greater number, in case of necessity is submitted to the wisdom of your board.

The Signals which I intended should convey the first notice of the approach of an Enemys Fleet, you will find in the inclosed paper; but if you will please to appoint a Committee of your body, I will desire the Brigadiers, Sullivan, Greene and Lord Stirling, to meet

them and adopt a better, if a better can be thought of. New Jersey is already advertized of these Signals.⁶³

If the four Battallions which were directed to be raised under the Command of the Colonels McDougall, Clinton, Ritzema and Wynkoop, are placed under the immediate care of the Committee of Safety, for this Colony by Congress; I should be glad to know, how far it is conceived that my power over them extend or whether I have any at all. Sure I am that they cannot be subjected to the direction of both, and I shall have no small reluctance in assuming an authority I am not vested with powers to execute; nor will my solicitude (further than as a well wisher to the Cause), on account of Arms for, and returns of these Regiments continue, if they are not considered, as within the line of my Command; It becomes therefore my Indispensable duty to be ascertained of this Matter, and to know whether these Regiments cannot be ordered out of the Colony; for Instance to New Jersey if necessity should require it.

It would give me singular pleasure to advance you the Sum asked for, but the low state of our Cash and heavy demands upon the pay Master, renders it altogether impracticable at this time. The Quarter Master and Commissary are both wanting Money and cannot be supplied, nor can Genl. Ward get what he has sent for, to pay the five Regiments to the

63. The alarm posts for the New Jersey Militia, which were to assemble on signal fires on the mountains, are noted in No. 36, vol. 3, folio 117, of the *Continental Army Returns*, at one time a part of the *Washington Papers*, but now in the custody of the Adjutant General's Office, War Department,

Washington, D. C. The signal points are given on folios 119–123. The alarm posts and signals settled April 14 are given on folio 125.

The signals were: “On the appearance of the Fleet, or their Boats moving towards Amboy, two flags, one above the other to be hoisted on the middle flag Staff, on the heights of Staten Island. On the appearance of the Fleet moving towards New York three flags, one above the other are to be hoisted on the same flag Staff. For the night two large heaps of Brush for the first; three large heaps of Brush for the second to be set on fire in such direction as to shew distinctly and separately.”

The alarm post changes made May 18 are found on folio 124.

Generals Greene, Sullivan, and Stirling recommended the same flag and fire signals on the highlands of the Navesink, which were to be repeated from the Staten Island station. They recommended “large Ensigns with broad stripes of red and white” and that the country militia turn out on the signals.

Eastward, till a fresh supply arrives, of which Congress is informed. Genl. Heath since my arrival here, has obtained a Warrant upon the pay Master for Money to replace the Sum which your Committee kindly lent him; and to the best of my recollection, Genl. Thompson told me, that he also meant to do the same. these Matters shall be enquired into. With great respect I remain Gentr. etc.

To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE

New York, April 28, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 23d Inst. The reason why I did not hitherto represent the state of your Colony to Congress was in expectation of your forwarding unto me a Sketch of it in writing; I shall take the first opportunity of doing it and if my Recommendation thereof has any weight with that August Body, it will give me much pleasure to render Service to your Colony. I am very glad that Colo Knox has taken a View of Newport and hope the directions he has left, will be attended with all the good consequences you mention. We have no Engineer that can possibly be spared from hence, indeed we are very deficient in that Department, and the State of this Place is such that had we many more than we have, there would be full employment from them. Colo Babcock's⁶⁵ misfortune is truly pitiable. the incontestable Proofs which he has given at Cambridge and since, of a Distempered Mind, must to every one acquainted with him, shew how unfit he must be to Command the forces of your Colony. I am with very great regard, Sir, etc.

P.S. the only Engineer we had to spare is sent off to Canada.

65. Col. Henry Babcock, of Rhode Island.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, April 29, 1776.

Dear Sir: I wrote you on the 24th. Inst. and am now to inform you, that in Addition to the four Regiments detached from hence under General Thompson; I am ordered by Congress to send six more. This Detachment will be under the Command of General Sullivan, and consist of two of the Eastern Regiments, Reed's and Stark's, and of four of these Provinces. The two first will embark to Day, the others will be push'd forwards as fast as possible.

I have spoke to the Commissary to send forward a Supply of Provisions: He says, that he is taking Measures for that Purpose, and that it shall be done.

The Powder you wrote for, I will attempt to furnish and as early as in my Power, the Augmentation of the Army in Canada necessarily requiring a large Increase to that which was there before.

The Congress have sent three Boxes with Money, said to contain 300,000 Dollars. They are thus far in their Way to you, and will be transmitted by General Sullivan.

I wish and doubt not but that you will make every Preparation at Albany for expediting the Troops to Canada. The Situation of our Affairs

there calls aloud for Dispatch and the most vigorous Exertions.

A Mr. Ray of this City has informed Colo. Ritzema, that a Mr. Philip Van Rensselaer has above three Hundred Stand of Arms in his possession at Albany. Do make strict Inquiry into the Matter, and if any can be had, send them here immediately; Ritzema's Regiment and others now raising, being greatly deficient, I may say, almost destitute, and we without any: I am, Dear Sir, etc.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK

New York, April 29, 1776.

Gentn.: Sometime before I left Cambridge, I received an Order of Congress to apply to the Assemblies or Conventions of the four New England Colonies, for Arms to supply the deficiency of their respective Regiments and if not to be had to discharge the men that wanted them. When I came to this Place and was informed by Colo Ritzema, of the want of this Article for his Regiment and the other Troops of this Colony, it became my duty to make this want known to Congress; at the same time giving it as my opinion, that as we found it no easy matter to recruit men, with the Expedition they were required, it might be disserviceable to discharge any of

the York Troops, as some lucky hit may throw Arms into our hands. In consequence of which, I received by Post the inclosed Resolution,⁶⁹ which without delay, I lay before your Honorable Body. And am Gentn. etc.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK

New York, April 30, 1776.

Gentn: I perceive by the tenor of your favor of yesterday, that my Letter of the 25th. has given Umbrage, which I am sorry for, as it was not most distantly in my Idea to give any.

Three things led me to suspect that the New York Battalions were not upon the same Establishment of the other Continental Troops; Current report, an implied exception in the order for detaching six more Battalions to Canada, and that part of your Letter signifying that four of these Battalions were to be raised under your immediate direction; which intimation coming in corroboration of the two first reasons (for I never had any information of this matter from Congress); led me to believe that you intended it as a genteel hint that I was not to consider them in the same light I did the others; it was not to be wondered at therefore that I should wish to know the extent of my authority over them that my Conduct might be regulated thereby; or, that I should be so solicitous in arming Regiments, raised for local purposes, as these for the General Service, when the latter are also greatly deficient in this essential point. These were the Ideas that filled my mind at the time

69. Resolve of April 26 authorizing Washington to apply to the Committee of Safety or Legislature of New York for arms for the New York troops.

of writing; If the extreme hurry occasioned by a variety of business which is continually pressing upon me, clouded the meaning I wished to convey, I can only add, that It never was, and I hope never will be, my intention to give unprovoked offence; of this your Committee may be once for all,

assured, that it is my earnest wish to co-operate with them, in every measure which can conduce to the General good, and that if I should, at any time, differ from them in the means, I shall feel my share of the concern, being with respect, Gent. etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, April 30, 1776.

Sir: I mean through you Sir, to do myself the Honor of laying before Congress, a Copy of an Address transmitted them some time ago by the Assembly of Rhode Island, which Governor Cooke favored me with in the Month of January, at the same time requesting me, to Interest myself in procuring a body of Forces on the Continental Establishment, for the defence of that Colony. I doubt not but the Address and Subject of it, have had the attention and consideration of Congress before now; But If they have not decided upon the Matter, I would beg leave to mention, that I have made enquiry into the situation and condition of the colony and find them to be as stated in the Address, and with all deference to the Opinion of Congress, conceive it highly necessary and expedient, that they

should adopt some measures for relieving their distress and granting the Aid prayed for. The Importance of it in the chain of Union, Its extensive Sea Coast, affording Harbours for our Shipping and Vessels, at the same time exposing and subjecting the Inhabitants to the ravages and depredations of the Enemy;—The Zeal and attachment which it has shewn and which still actuate it toward the common cause; Its incapacity to pay a sufficient number of Men for its defence, should they be able to furnish them, after so many engaged in other Services; these and many other reasons, too obvious to be mentioned, plead powerfully for the notice and attention of Congress, and seem to me to call for their support.

Having thus stated the matter to Congress for their consideration, agreeable to Governor Cooke's, request when I had the Honor to see him in my way to this place, I shall leave It with them, not doubting but they will duly weigh Its importance and give such assistance as they may think reasonable and Just; what they chiefly wish for, is, that the Troops they have raised, may be taken into Continental pay and a Commanding Officer to be appointed by Congress.⁷¹ I have the Honor to be &ca.

71. On May 11 Congress resolved: "That the two batallions, directed by the assembly of Rhode Island to be raised, be taken into continental pay; the batallion ordered to be raised in November last...and the one since ordered to be raised...be taken into continental pay..."

To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

New York, May 2, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 22d Ulto. and am sorry to Inform you, that it is not in my power at this time to refund to your Colony the Powder lent the Continent; our Magazine here being very low and the pressing demands from Canada obliging me immediately to forward Sixty Barrels thither. Should any Inconveniency result to the Colony from not having it, It will give me much uneasiness; you may rest assured, that as soon as I possibly can, I will make a return of it.

The Commissary General has not presented the Account yet; when he does, it shall be immediately paid. I am etc.

To COLONEL CORNELIUS D. WYNKOOP¹⁰

New York, May 3, 1776.

Sir: Since the Adjutant General's Letter to you of the first Inst., I have received from the Committee of Safety a Note of the Companies belonging to each Regiment and the Places where they are stationed: by which I find four of the Companies belonging to Colonel Clinton's Regiment are at Fort Montgomery and Fort Constitution, which will answer the Purposes intended when the Order was sent to you to repair thither; which Order I now think proper to countermand, as I have received by Express from General Schuyler a Letter wherein he mentions the Necessity of having a Regiment stationed on the Communication betwixt Albany and Canada. will, therefore, Sir, on Receipt hereof —repair to Albany, and obey such Orders as you may receive from General Schuyler respecting your Regiment. I am, etc.

10. Of the Fourth New York Regiment.

To LIEUTENANT COLONEL HENRY BEEKMAN LIVINGSTON¹¹

Head Quarters, New York, May 4, 1776.

Sir: You will on Receipt hereof give Orders to the Officers of the Battalion, of which you are Lieut. Colonel, to join their respective Companies; which if you do not find compleat let an Officer from each go on the recruiting Service, and if in Want of Arms, you must apply to the Committee of Safety, to procure them for you if possible.

There are four Companies belonging to your Regiment now stationed at Fort Montgomery and Fort Constitution.

You will repair thither and if no superior Officer is there, you must take the Command, and look to the Works now carrying on there, which you must exert yourself in seeing finished as soon as possible. The three Companies of your Regiment stationed on Long Island are to remain there; The other Company you will order to join you at the Forts, with all convenient Speed. I am, Sir, etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, May 3, 1776.

Dear Sir: I received your Favour of the 27th. Ulto., Yesterday Evening with its several Inclosures, and in Part Answer thereto, refer you to mine of the 29th., which probably will have come to Hand ere now; but least any accident has prevented it, I will again inform you, that in Obedience to an Order of Congress, I have detached six more Regiments under General Sullivan, in Addition to those with General Thompson, to reinforce our Army in

11. Of the Third New York Regiment.

Canada: all of which, except a few Companies, are embarked, and as the Situation of our Affairs in that Quarter is not so promising as we could wish, and an early Arrival of them may be of file most infinite Advantage to us; I shall repeat my Request, and in full Confidence, trust, that you will do every Thing in your Power to hasten their March. I have sent forward with them 60 Barrels of Powder, which is all can be spared from hence at this Time, which I hope will arrive safe.

The Commissary, I have been importunate with: He tells me eight Hundred Barrels of Pork are gone to Albany, and that he every Day expects a further Quantity from Connecticut, which he will order to you, as soon as it comes, without stopping here.

You will also receive three Boxes of Money, said to contain 300,000 Dollrs. which from my Letter from Congress accompanying it, are for Canada. Your's probably will be more particular; but I should

think, my clear Sir, if the whole will not be more than sufficient to pay the Troops, and the Claims there, tho' some of it might be intended for you, that it will be adviseable to send it forward. You will have it in your Power to get a further Supply before long, to satisfy your Engagements. Those in Canada either with our Men or others, should not remain unpaid at this critical and interesting Period. You however, will be better able to judge what should be done in this Instance, than I possibly can. With Respect to your military Chest when replenished, I see no Impropriety in your giving Warrants as usual. It seems to be necessary and of Consequence must have my Approbation.

The Quarter Master has forwarded a Parcel of intrenching Tools, and other Necessaries with about 500 Tents, the latter to be equally and properly distributed amongst this last Detachment. No more can be had at this Time.

You will also receive the Chain which General Lee order'd and which I think should be sent to and fix'd at the Place it is designed for, with all possible Expedition. It may be of great Service and Benefit.

In Respect of Sailors to cruize and pass in the Lakes; on the 24th. Ulto., I

gave a Warrant to a Captain Jacobus Wynkoop for 276 \square Dollars for a Month's advance Pay for himself, Officers and Men, who are engaged in that Service; Of this, I there advised you, of their different Pay that you might take an Account of it, and know what they are to receive in future.

I am exceedingly sorry you should have been so indisposed: I had hoped you would get perfectly restored so as not only to have seen the End of this Campaign; but your great Labour and unwearied Assiduity in the Cause of your Country, crowned with Success, and the Blessings of Freedom; you have my most fervent Wishes for it.

I have just received an Arrangement of the Companies allotted by the Committee of Safety to Colonels Wynkoop and Clinton, for their Regiments, a Copy of which you have inclosed, by which you will see they are differently arranged from what you expected or I knew. I have, therefore, countermanded an Order, which was issued to Colo. Wynkoop before, and directed him (the Companies at Albany being in his Regiment) to repair immediately to you, for such Directions and Orders respecting his Regiment, as you may judge necessary to give. This you will employ at the Posts you mentioned, and for the Communication. I can spare no more from hence, the ten Regiments already detached, having weakened us here too much. The four Companies of Colo. Clinton's Regiment at the Highland Fortifications, I intend shall remain there, for carrying on and garrisoning those Works, and which will be joined by another. Those on Long Island will be kept there. I am etc.

***To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS**

New York, May 5, 1776.

Sir: I have so often, and so fully communicated my want of Arms to Congress, that I should not have given them the trouble of receiving another Letter upon this Subject, at this time, but for the particular application of Colo. Wain of Pennsylvania, who has pointed out a method by which he thinks they may be obtain'd.

In the hands of the Committee of Safety at Philadelphia, there are, according to Colo. Wain's Acct. not less than two or three thousand stand of Arms for Provincial use; from hence, he thinks a number might be borrowed by Congress; provided they are replaced with Continental Arms, as they are brought into the Magazine in that City. At a crisis so important as this, such a loan might be attended with most signal advantages while the defenceless state of the Regiments, if no relief can be had, may be productive of fatal Consequences.

To give Congress some Idea of our Situation with respect to Arms, (and justice to my own Character requires that it should be known to them, altho' the world at large will form their opinion of our strength from numbers, without attending to circumstances) it may not be amiss to Inclose a Copy of a Return which I received a few days ago from the Troops

in the Highlands,²⁶ and add, that by a Report from Colo. Retzema's Regiment of the 29th ulto., there appeared to be only 97 Firelocks and Seven Bayonets belonging thereto, and that all the Regiments from the Eastward are deficient from Twenty to Fifty of the former.

Four of those Companies at the Fortifications in the Highlands belonging to Colo. Clintons Regiment but in what condition the residue are, on acc't. of Arms, and how Col. Wynkoop's Men are provided I cannot undertake to say, but am told most miserably; as Col. Dayton's (of New Jersey) and Col. Wain's of Pennsylvania also are. This Sir, is a true tho' melancholy description of our Situation; the propriety therefore of keeping Arms in Store when Men in actual pay are wanting of them and who it is to be presumed will, as they ought, bear the heat and burthen of the day, is submitted with all due deference to the superior judgment of others.

I cannot, by all the enquiries I have been able to make, learn, what number of arms have been taken from the Tories, where they lay, or how they are to be got at.

The Committee of Safety for this Colony have assured me that no exertions of theirs shall be wanting to procure Arms; but our sufferings in the meanwhile may prove fatal, as Men without are in a manner useless.

I have therefore thought of Employing an Agent, whose sole business it shall be, to ride through the middle and

26. The return from Isaac Nicoll, colonel of New York Militia, presented a state of the garrisons at Fort Montgomery on April 23, and at Fort Constitution on April 29. This return, dated Apr. 29, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

interior parts of these Governments for the purpose of buying up such Arms as the Inhabitants may Incline to sell, and are fit for use.²⁷

The designs of the Enemy are too much behind the Curtain, for me to form any accurate opinion of their Plan of Operations for the Summers Campaign; we are left to wander therefore in the field of conjecture, and as no place, all its consequences considered, seemed of more Importance in the execution of their grand Plan, than possessing themselves of Hudsons River; I thought it advisable to remove, with the Continental Army to this City, as soon as the Kings Troops evacuated Boston, but if the Congress from their knowledge, information, or believe, think it best for the general good of the Service, that I should go to the Northward, or elsewhere, they are convinced I hope, that they have nothing more to do, than signify their Commands. With great respect, I have the Honor etc.

27. The resolve of May 14, 1776, authorized Washington to employ such an agent, but ignored the reported stores in Philadelphia. The Secret Committee was ordered to send to camp the muskets that were at Newport, R. I.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 5, 1776.

Sir: I am honored with your favor of the 20th. ulto., and observe what Congress have done respecting the settlement of the Pay Masters Accounts. This seems expedient as he is out of Office, and I am certain will be attended with but little if any difficulty, nothing more being necessary thereto, than to compare the Warrants with his debets, and the receipts he has given with his Credits.¹⁸ I wish every other Settlement as easy, and that a Committee was appointed to examine

and audit the Accounts on which the Warrants are founded, particularly those of the Quarter Master and Commissary General;—they are long and high in amount, consisting of a variety of charges, and of course more intricate, and will require time and an extraordinary degree of attention, to adjust and liquidate in a proper manner. Upon this Subject I did myself the Honor to write you a considerable time ago.¹⁹

Having had several complaints from the officers in the Eastern Regiments, who have been and are engaged in recruiting, about the expence attending it, and for which they have never been allowed any thing, tho' the officers in these Governments have, as I am informed, I shall be glad to know whether the allowance of 10/, granted to the officers for every man Inlisted by the resolve of Congress in is general and indiscriminate, or confined to the Middle Districts: If general, must I have retrospect to the time

18. The former Paymaster General of the Continental Army, James Warren, had resigned and had been directed to hand in his vouchers and papers to the Superintendents of the Treasury, which was a standing committee of Congress, appointed Feb. 17, 1776.

19. On May 10 Congress directed that the resolves of April 1, governing the settlement of accounts, be sent to Washington.

of the Resolve, and pay for the intermediate services or only for future Inlistments.²⁰

In a Letter I wrote Congress the 25th of December, I inclosed one I had received from Jacob Bailey Esquire, about opening a Road from Newbury to Canada; I received another on the 15th. Ulto. and from his Account and the intelligence of others, I have no doubt of the practicability of the measure, and am well informed that the distance will be considerably shortened; In so much, that our Troops going to Canada from any part of the New England Governments, Eastward of Connecticut River, or returning from thence Home, will perform their March in five or Six days less than by going or returning any way now used.

Add to this, that the road may be carried to Missisque River, as is said, from whence the Water Carriage to St. Johns is good, except forty odd Miles, or so far to the Northward, as to keep clear of the Lake altogether and which will afford an easy pass to and from Canada at all Seasons. The benefits resulting from this Rout, will be so great and Important, that I have advanced Col: Bailey Two hundred and fifty pounds to begin with and directed him to execute his plan: no doubt it will require a more considerable advance to accomplish it, but the whole will be soon sunk.

The expence saved, by shortning six days pay and provisions for the Men returning to the Eastern Governments, at the expiration of this Campaign, will be almost, if not more than, equal to the Charge of Opening it: If not, as in all probability there will be often a necessity for detachments of our Troops from those Governments, to go and return,

20. On May 10 Congress resolved that the resolution of January 17 was general in its operation, and included, therefore, the troops of the Eastern Department; allowance was to be made for all the troops enlisted since that date.

It will soon be repaid.²¹

By a Letter from General Schuyler of the 27th. Ulto. I find General Thompson and his Brigade had arrived at Albany. General Sullivan with the last, except three or four Companies of Colonel Wayne's Regiment, not yet come, is embarked and gone, and probably will be soon there. I am apprehensive from General Schuyler's Account, they will not proceed from thence with the expedition wished, owing to a difficulty in getting Teams and provender for the Cattle necessary to carry their Baggage, and a scarcity of Batteaux for transporting so great a Number; tho' he is using the utmost Industry and deligence to procure them. Should they be retarded for any considerable time, It will be exceedingly unfortunate, as we are much weakened here by their going, and our Army in Canada not strengthened. I have sent with the last Brigade sixty Barrels of Powder and other Stores and Intrenching Tools, a supply being wanted; also the Chain for a Boom at the Narrows of Richlieu, and the three Boxes of Money brought me by Mr. Hanson, and have wrote General Schuyler to have the Boom fixed, as soon as possible. The Commissary too has forwarded about Eight Hundred Barrels of Pork, and is in expectation of a further Quantity from Connecticut, which will go on without stopping here.

As the magazines from whence the Northern and Eastern Armies will occasionally receive supplies of Powder, will probably be kept here, and our Stock is low and inconsiderable, being much reduced by the Sixty Barrels sent to Canada, I shall be glad to have a Quantity immediately forwarded. Our Stores should be great, for

21. On May to Congress in its resolves approved, and directed Washington to prosecute the plan.

if the Enemy make an Attack upon the Town, or attempt to go up the North River, the expenditure will be considerable. Money too is much wanted, the Regiments that are paid, have only received to the first of April, except those of Pennsylvania and Jersey gone to Canada, they are paid up to the last of April. By a Letter from General Ward, I find his Chest is just exhausted, the Money left with

him for the Payment of the five Regiments at Boston and Beverly, being almost expended, by large Drafts in favor of the Commissary and Quarter Master, and in fitting out the Armed Vessels. I would here ask a question, towit, Whether as Mr. Warren's Commission is superseded by Mr. Palfrey's appointment, It will not be necessary to fix upon some person to pay the Troops at those places, or are the payments to go thro' his hands? he does not incline to do anything in the Affair without the direction of Congress.

I have inclosed you a return of the last Brigade detached and also of the forces remaining here, and as it is a matter of much importance to know the whole of our strength from time to time and to see it at one view, for regulating our Movements with propriety, I wish it were a direction from Congress to the Commanding Officers in the different Districts to make Monthly returns to the Commander in Chief of the Continental Army, of the State of their Troops in their department, and also of the Military Stores: such direction will probably make them more attentive than they otherwise would be. I could not get a return of the Army in Canada, all last year.²²

22. On May 10 Congress passed a resolution to this effect.

I beg leave to lay before Congress, a Copy of the proceedings of a Court Martial upon Lieutenant Grover²³ of the 2d. Regiment, and of his defence, which I should not have troubled them with, had I not conceived the Courts Sentence upon the facts stated in the proceedings, of a singular nature; the small fine imposed, by no means adequate to the enormity of his offence and to be a dangerous and pernicious tendency: for these reasons, I thought it my duty to lay the proceedings before them, in order to their forming such a Judgment upon the Facts, as they shall conceive right and just, and advancive of the Public Good. At the same time I would mention, that I think it of material consequence that Congress should make a resolve, taking away the supposed right of succession in the Military line from one Rank to another, which is claimed by many upon the happening of vacancies, and upon which principle this Offence seems to have originated in a great measure, and this extraordinary Judgement to be founded; declaring that no succession or promotion can take place in case of vacancies, without a Continental Commission giving and Authorizing it. It is of much importance to check and entirely suppress this Opinion and claim, become too prevalent already, and which have an obvious tendency to Introduce Mutiny and disorder: Or if they conceive the Claim good, and that it should take place, that they will declare it so, that the point may be known and settled in future.²⁴ I have the Honor &ca.²⁵

23. Lieut. Thomas Grover. He was tried for disobedience of orders and using insulting language to his superior officer. The proceedings of his court-martial and his defense, dated Apr. 29, 1776, are in the *Washington Papers*.

24. On May 10 it was resolved "That this Congress has hitherto exercised, and ought to retain the power of promoting the officers in the continental service according to their merit; and that no promotion or succession shall take place upon any vacancy, without the authority of a continental Commission."

25. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 7, 1776.

Sir: At a Quarter after seven this Evening I received by Express a Letter from Thomas Cushing Esquire Chairman of a Committee of the Honorable General Court, covering one from the Committee of Salem Copies of which I do myself the Honor to transmit to Congress that they may Judge of the Intelligence contained therein and direct such measures to be taken upon the occasion as they may think proper and necessary. I would observe, that supposing Captain Lee's Account to be true in part, there must be a mistake, either as to the Number of Troops, or the Ships. If there are no more Ships than what are mentioned, It is certain there cannot be so many Troops; of this however Congress can Judge as well as myself, and I submit it to them, whether upon the whole circumstances and the Incertainty of their destination, If they were met with at all, they choose that any forces shall be detached from hence, as they will see from the returns transmitted Yesterday, the number of Men here, is but small and inconsiderable and what is much to be regretted, no small part of those without Arms. perhaps by dividing and subdividing our force too much, we shall have no one post sufficiently guarded. I shall wait their direction and whatever their order is will comply with it as soon as possible. I have &ca.

P. S: I had by the Express, a Letter from General Ward, containing an Account similar to that from the Salem committee, and by way of Captain Lee. Should the Commissioners arrive, How are they to be received and treated? I wish the direction of Congress upon the Subject, by return of the Bearer.³⁰

30. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, May 9, 1776.

Sir: Your Letters of the 27th. and 28th. Ulto. came in Course to Hand; I am glad that you have given your Attention to the Works, which I doubt not by this Time are compleat. It will give me Pleasure to hear they are: For should these Accounts of Hessians and Hanoverian Troops coming over prove true, it is possible the Enemy may make some Attempts to regain a Footing in your Province.

I have represented to Congress the Want you was in for Cash, to which I have not yet received an Answer: When I do, you shall be informed thereof.

The Account you give of the Vessels at Beverley, being unfit for Service, surprizes me prodigiously; I was taught to believe very differently of the Ship Jenny, by Commodore Manley, and Captain Bartlett, who you mention to have given you their Opinion of them. The Brigantine from Antigua was also thought very fit to arm.

Doctor Brown's³⁴ Accounts are more immediately in the Director General's of the Hospital Department. When he arrives, here, I shall give them to him for his Inspection.

Mr. Singletorry's Account is easily settled, as he has the Commissary's Receipt for the Arms. If the Account of the Loss of the Arms was more particular, it would be more regular and satisfactory.

A Letter is just come to my Hands from Winthrop Sargent³⁵ Esqr. Agent for the Navy at Gloucester; He says, there are some Women and Children whom he is obliged to maintain at the Continl. Expense; also a Number of Men taken in some of the last Prizes. You will please to examine into their Situation; If Prisoners of War they should be sent into some Inland Place and confined; If Tories, the General Court are the proper Persons to take Cognizance of them.

I see by the public Prints, that the Prizes at Beverley are to be sold the 20th Inst.: As by the Obstructions put on

34. Probably Dr. William Brown, of Alexandria, Va., and, later, director general of the hospital, Middle Department.

35. Winthrop Sargent, then agent for Continental armed vessels.

Commerce in General, there may appear but few Purchasers for the Vessels: of Course, they may be sold vastly under their Value, I think you had best have some Persons in whom you can confide, present at the Sale, with Power to purchase the large Ship, and the Brig from Antigua, if he finds them going very much under their Value.³⁶ It is not above two or three Years since the Ship cost £3000 Sterlg. She is to be sure something worse for the Wear, and I believe is not remarkably well found at present, as she has been pillaged for the Use of our armed Vessels, which must make a considerable Abatement of her Value. The Brigantine is, I suppose, in the same Predicament; but a good Judge will easily know their Value.

Wm. Watson Esqr. of Plymouth, advises that the Prizes *Norfolk* and *happy Return* , are condemn'd; and desires I would appoint a Day for Sale of them, and their Cargoes: This you will please to do, letting them be advertised in the Papers, at least a Fortnight before the Sale. I am, etc.

To THE COMMITTEE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE³⁷

New York, May 9, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 3d Inst. on Tuesday Evening, covering that of the Committee of Salem to your Honble. Court; and judging the Intelligence interesting and Important, I immediately forwarded Copies of both to Congress by the Express for them to give such Orders and direction respecting it, as they might think proper and requisite. I am not yet favored with their Answer; as soon as it comes, I will send it you by the Express, and whatever measures they direct me to pursue, I will attempt to put in execution with all

36. To be fitted out as additional Continental armed vessels.

37. Thomas Cushing was chairman of this committee.

Possible dispatch. The Account having come thro' different hands, I hope it is exaggerated; It appears inconsistent and impossible in part; certainly there is a mistake, either as to the Number of Troops or the Ships, there must be more of the latter or fewer of the former; 60 Vessels could not bring 12,000 Men, unless they are much larger than usual, besides provisions and Stores: nor should such a fleet and Armament be coming, do I think it altogether probable, that an account of their destination and Views, could be so distinctly and accurately given to the Master, who informed Captn. Lee; I should rather suppose, that they would wish to take us by surprize. For these reasons, and as their destination may be elsewhere, and as the Army here is greatly Weakened and reduced by Ten of

the Strongest Regiments being ordered to Quebec; I could not think myself authorized to detach any reinforcement from hence, without the direction of Congress; least by dividing the Army into small parties, we should have no place secure and guarded; Assuring you at the same time, I shall be always ready and happy to give you every Assistance in my power against our common Enemies, when it can be done consistently with the public good. I am &ca.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 11, 1776.

Sir: I am now to acknowledge the receipt of your favors of the 4th and 7th Instant, with their several Inclosures, and am exceedingly glad that before the Resolution of Congress respecting Lieut. Col. Ogden came to hand, I had ordered him to join his regiment and had quelled a

disagreeable Spirit of mutiny and desertion which had taken place and seemed to be rising to a great degree in consequence of it: In order to effect It, I had the Regiment paraded, and ordered two more at the same time under Arms convinced them of their error and Ill conduct and obtained a promise for their good behaviour in future. To such as had absconded I gave pardons on their assurances to return to their duty again.

In my Letter of the 5th Instant, which I had the honor of addressing you, I mentioned to Congress the refractory and mutinous conduct of Lieut. Grover of the 2d Regiment, and laid before them a Copy of the proceedings of a Court Martial upon him, and of his defence, with a view that such measures should be adopted as they shou'd think adequate to his crime. I would now beg leave to inform them, that since then he has appeared sensible of his mis-conduct, and having made a written acknowledgement of his Offence and begged pardon for it, as by the inclosed Copy will appear, I thought it best to release him from his confinement, and have ordered him to join his Regiment, which I hope will meet their approbation and render any determination as to him unnecessary; Observing at the same time, that I have endeavoured and I flatter myself not ineffectually, to support their authority and a due subordination in the Army, I have found it of importance and expedient to yield many points, in fact, without seeming to have

done it, and this to avoid bringing on a too frequent discussion of matters, which in a political view ought to be kept a little behind the Curtain, and not be made too much the subjects of disquisition. Time only can eradicate and overcome customs and prejudices of long standing; they must be got the better of, by slow and gradual advances.

I would here take occasion to suggest to Congress, (not wishing or meaning of myself to assume the smallest degree of power in any instance) the propriety and necessity of having their Sentiments respecting the filling up of Vacancies and issuing Commissions to Officers, especially to those under the rank of Field Officers. Had I literally complied to the directions given upon this Subject, when I first engaged in the Service, and which I conceived to be superceded by a subsequent resolve for forming the Army upon the present establishment, I must have employed one clerk for no other business, than Issuing Warrants of Appointment and giving information to Congress for their confirmation or refusal. It being evident from the nature of things, that there will be frequent changes and vacancies in Office, from death and a variety of other causes, I now submit it to them and pray their direction, whether I am to pursue that mode and all the Ceremonies attending it, or to be at liberty to fill up and grant Commissions at once to such as may be fit and proper persons to succeed.

When I came from Cambridge, I left instructions with Col. Knox of the Artillery Regiment, for the regulation of his Conduct and among other things, directed him immediately to send forward to this place, Lieut: Col: Burbeck, who notwithstanding he received orders for that purpose,

has refused to come, considering himself as he says in his Answer to Colonel Knox's Letter (Copies of which I have enclosed) bound in point of Generosity to stay in the Service of the province, tho' I am told by Colonel Knox, that some of the Members of the General Court hearing of the matter, informed him, that they did not consider him engaged to them, and that he had no just pretext for his refusal. I thought it right to lay this matter before Congress and submit it to them, whether Colo. Burbeck, who will or will not serve the Continent, or go, to this or that place as it may suit him and square with his pretended notions of generosity, should be longer continued in Office.⁴¹

Before I have done, with the utmost deference and respect, I would beg leave to remind Congress of my former Letters and Applications, respecting the appointment of proper persons to superintend and take directions of such Prisoners, as have already fallen and will fall into our hands, in the course of the War; being fully convinced, if there were persons appointed for and who would take the whole Management of them under their care, that the Continent would save a considerable sum of money by it, and the Prisoners be better treated and provided with real necessaries, than what they now are, and shall take the liberty to add, that it appears to me a matter of much importance and worthy of

41. Lieut. Col. William Burdeck. On May 25 Congress resolved that he be dismissed from the Continental service.

consideration, that particular and proper places of security should be fixed on and established in the interior parts of the different Governments for their reception. Such Establishments axe agreeable to the Practice and usage of the English and other Nations and are founded on principles of necessity and public utility. The advantages which will arise from them, are obvious and many; I shall only mention two or three: they will tend much to prevent escapes, which are difficult to effect, when the Public is once advertized, that the Prisoners are restrained to a few stated and well known places and not permitted to go from thence, and the more Ingenious among them, from discriminating and spreading their artful and pernicious Intrigues and Opinions throughout the Country, which would Influence the Weaker and wavering part of Mankind and meet with too favorable a hearing. Further it will be less in their power to join and assist our Enemies in cases of Invasion, and will give us an Opportunity always to know from the returns of those appointed to superintend them, what number we have in possession, the force sufficient to check and suppress their Hostile views in Times of emergency, and the expenses necessary for their maintenance and support. Many other reasons might be adduced to prove the necessity and expediency of the measure, I shall only subjoin one more and then have done on the Subject, which is, that many of the Towns where prisoners have been already sent, not having conveniencie for, or the means of keeping them, complain they are burthensome, and have become careless, inattentive, and altogether indifferent, whether they escape or not, and those of them that are restricted to a close confinement, the limits of Jail, neglected

and not treated with the care and regard, which Congress wish.

I have not received further Intelligence of the German Troops since my Letter of the 7 Inst. covering Mr. Cushing's dispatches; but least the account of their coming should be true, may it not be advisable and good policy, to raise some Companies of our Germans to send among them, when they arrive, for exciting a spirit of disaffection and desertion? If a few trusty, sensible fellows could get with them, I should think they would have great weight and influence with the common Soldiery, who certainly have no enmity towards us, having received no Injury, nor cause of Quartell from us.

The measure having occurred and appearing to me expedient, I thought it prudent to mention it for the consideration of Congress.

Having received a Letter from General Ward, advising that Congress have accepted of his resignation and praying to be relieved; and it being necessary that a General Officer should be sent to take the command of the Troops at Boston, especially if the Army should arrive which is talked of, and which some consider as a probable event, I must beg leave to recommend to Congress the appointment of some Brigadier Generals, not having more here (nor so many at this Time) than are essential to

the Government and conducting the Forces and Works carrying on. Generals Sullivan and Thompson being ordered to Canada, I cannot spare one more General Officer from hence,

without injuring the service greatly. and leaving the Army here without a sufficient number.⁴²

Having frequent applications from the Committee of Safety and others about an Exchange of Prisoners being frequently made and not having Authority to pursue any other mode, than that marked out by a resolve of Congress some considerable time ago, I hope they will pardon me when I wish them to take into consideration such parts of my Letter of the 22d Ulto. as relate to this Subject and for their determination upon it. I shall then have it in my power to give explicit and satisfactory Answers to those who shall apply. I have the Honor &ca.⁴³

To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE

New York, May 13, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 6th Inst., for which and Its several Inclosures, I return you my thanks.

Agreeable to my promise, on the 30th Ulto. I wrote Congress respecting the state of your Colony, importuning their Attention to it, and that proper measures should be adopted for its relief and defence. A copy of the Letter you have inclosed for your perusal and further satisfaction.

It gives me much pleasure, to hear there is so much unanimity among you, and that the Inhabitants of Newport have come to the laudable and necessary Resolution you mentioned; If united, your exertions most probably will have

42. On May 14, in compliance with the above request, Congress resolved that General Washington should order a major general to take command in the Eastern Department and also send a brigadier general to that department. On May 16 Horatio Gates was appointed a major general and Thomas Mifflin a brigadier general. John Adams, in a letter to Hancock (May 16), records: "I have written to Genl. Washington to request him, if agreeable, that those gentlemen may take the command in Boston."

43. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison, who also copied this letter into the "Letter Book" record and made many variations and changes therein, which do not, however, alter the meaning. The text here used is from the letter signed and sent, which is a much stronger composition than the "Letter

Book" copy. Maj. Gen. Horatio Gates's memorandum on England's method of treating prisoners was inclosed by Washington and is filed with this letter in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

the desired effect; and tho' they should not be so fully answered, as men of over sanguine dispositions hope and expect; yet they will be productive of great benefits and advantages to the Colony and at the same time promote the public good. I am &c.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 15, 1776.

Sir: Since my last of the 11 Instant, which I had the honor to address you, nothing of Moment or Importance has occurred, and the principal design of this, is to communicate to Congress, the Intelligence I received from General Schuyler by a Letter of the 10th. Instant,⁵⁴ respecting the progress of our Troops in getting towards Canada, not doubting of their impatience and anxiety to hear of it, and of every thing relating to the expedition; for their more particular information and satisfaction, I have done myself the pleasure to extract the substance of his Letter on this head, which is as follows "That General Thompson with the last of his Brigade in the Morning of Tuesday sennight embarked at Fort George, and in the Evening of the next day, General Sullivan arrived at Albany; That he had ordered an additional Number of Carpenters to Assist in building Boats, who funishing Eight every day, would have 110 complete by the 21st. before which he was fearful the last of General Sullivan's Brigade could not embark; That they would carry 30 Men each

54. Schuyler wrote two letters to Washington on May 10, both of which are in the *Washington Papers*.

besides the Baggage, Ammunition and Intrenching Tools; That he has given most pointed orders to restrain the licentiousness of the Troops, which was disgraceful and very Injurious in those gone on heretofore, in abusing the Inhabitants and Batteauxmen and that he had ordered Captain Romans from Canada for Trial at Albany, there being sundry complaints lodged against him. He also informs that the 60 Barrells of Powder had arrived and would be forwarded that day; That the 1st. Regiment of General Sullivan's Brigade marched that Morning and that the Intrenching Tools and about 600 Barrells of Pork were also gone on; That he could not possibly send more than half of the 300,000 Dollars into Canada being greatly in debt on the public Account and the Creditors exceedingly clamorous and Importunate for payment, which Sum he hopes will be sufficient 'till the Canadians agree to take our paper Currency, to which they are much averse, and of which he is exceedingly doubtful; That he had got the Chain and would forward it that day to General Arnold,

with orders to fix it at the rapids of Richlieu. He adds that he had reviewed General Sullivan's Brigade in presence of about 260 Indians who were greatly pleased with the order and regularity of the Troops and surprized at their Number which the Tories had industriously propogated consisted only of 3 Companies and that they were kept always walking the Streets to induce them to believe their Number was much greater than it really was."

I have enclosed a copy of General Schuyler's Instructions to Jas. Price Esqr. Deputy Commissary General, for the regulation of his Conduct in that department, which I received last night and which General Schuyler requested me to forward you; I also beg leave to lay before Congress a Copy of a Letter from Samuel Stringer director of one of the Hospitals, purporting an Application for an Increase of Surgeons, Mates &ca.; an Estimate of which is also inclosed, and submit it to them what number must be sent from hence, or be got else where:⁵⁵ It is highly probable that many more will be wanted in Canada, than what are already there, on Account of the late Augmentation of the Army, but I thought it most advisable to make his requisition known to Congress, and to take their order and direction upon it: As to the Medicines I shall speak to Doctor Morgan, (not yet arrived) as soon as he comes, and order him to forward such as may be necessary and can be possibly spared. I have &ca.⁵⁶

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, May 15, 1776.

Dear Sir: I received your Favours of the 3rd. and 4th. Inst. and was happy to hear of the safe Arrival of the Commissioner from Congress at St. John's, and that so many Batteaus

55. These documents are in the *Washington Papers*.

56. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

with Troops had passed there the 29th. Ulto. 'Ere this, I hope, the Army before Quebec is considerably augmented; I am too well convinced there was great Occasion for it.

As to Money, the State of our Chest would not have justified a Loan or Supply, if Congress had not furnished you with what you received by Colo. Reid, having seldom more than will satisfy pressing Claims against myself.

As to Pork, I refer you to my Letter of the 3rd. Inst. and can only add, that the Commissary has assured me he will do all in his Power to forward a Supply.

In Respect to the Trial of Captain Romans⁵⁷ or any other, that it may be expedient to bring to Justice, I think it highly necessary, and tho' it may not be altogether so formal and regular, yet I shall most readily dispense with Ceremonies, where it will promote the public Good.

I have made Inquiry into our Stores of Lead and find that I have it in my Power to spare you about 5 Tons, which shall be sent with the Nails as soon as they can be collected; the Qr. Master having Persons out in different Places trying to procure them. I suppose whatever can be got will be forwarded ToMorrow or next Day with the utmost Expedition, as you seem to be so much in Want from your Letter of the 11th. Instant.

Your Favors of the 10th. came to Hand last Night with their several Inclosures, for which I return you my Thanks and agreeable to your Request by this Morning's Post, I transmitted to Congress a Copy of your Orders to Mr. Price with the several

57. Capt. Bernard Romans, of the Pennsylvania Independent Artillery.

Letters for them.

The Letter from the Commissioners, which you were kind enough to leave open for my Perusal, describes Matters and the Situation of our Affairs in Canada, in so striking a Light, that nothing less than the most wise and vigorous Exertions of Congress, and the Army there, can promise Success to our Schemes and Plans in that Quarter. What might have been effected last Year without much Difficulty, has become an arduous and important Work. However, I hope, all Things will yet go well.⁵⁸

I am exceedingly glad that so large a Number of Indians was present at the Review of General Sullivan's Brigade. They probably, from the Appearance of so many armed Men somewhat instructed in Discipline, may have received some favorable Impressions of our Strength sufficient to counter operate all the ingenuous and insidious Arts of Toryism. When those arrive which you mention, I shall take proper Notice of them, and have necessary Provisions made for their Entertainment. I am, Sir, etc.

58. Three commissioners—Benjamin Franklin, Samuel Chase, and Charles Carroll— were appointed by Congress (February 15) to repair to Canada. Their instructions will be found spread on the *Journals of the Continental Congress* of March 10. They were accompanied by the Rev. John Carroll,

a Catholic clergyman, afterwards archbishop of Baltimore, whose influence with the people, on account of his religious principles and character, it was thought, would be useful.

The commissioners arrived at Montreal on April 29. But they found the state of affairs in Canada by no means such as to encourage any just hope of success to their mission. The Canadians seemed to remember the antagonism displayed by the Congress to the Quebec Act and the religious prejudice formerly displayed. Negligence, mismanagement, and a combination of unlucky incidents where the troops were concerned had produced a confusion and disorder that it was now too late to remedy. The commissioners used every effort in their power, but to little effect. Ill health caused Doctor Franklin to return in a few days. His two associates remained till after the American forces had retreated to Sorel, and were preparing to evacuate Canada.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SUFFOLK, LONG ISLAND⁵⁹

New York, May 16, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 14th with an Account of the apprehending of Sundry Tories by order of your Committee and the taking of others by Capt. Harden is now before me. Your Zeal and activity upon this occasion is truly commendable, and with great pleasure I will lend any aid in my power, that shall be thought within the line of my department, to root out or secure such abominable pests of Society. But as you have neither pointed out the names or places of abode of the persons aluded to, by your Informants on long Island, I must beg the favor of a more explicit description from you; and in the mean while, will set on foot a proper enquiry into this matter of some Gentlemen here, acquainted with the Island, and concert some plan for defeating the designs which you think are in agitation. I shall add no more at present than that. I am, etc.

59. Jonathan Sturges was chairman of this committee.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW HAMPSHIRE

New York, May 16, 1776.

Gentn: The Honorable Continental Congress having lately come to some Resolutions, respecting the Cannon and other Stores in Boston, which Interest your Colony, and the mode to be observed for

paying the Militia lately called in for the defence of the lines before Boston; I do myself the honor to transmit you Copies thereof least they may not have been otherwise forwarded. and am Gentn:

To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE

New York, May 16, 1776.⁶⁰

Gentn: The Honorable Continental Congress having come to sundry resolutions, respecting the Cannon and Stores in and about Boston, and the mode of paying the Militia lately called in for the defence of the Lines before it; I do myself the honor to transmit you Copies thereof, least they may not have come to hand. I would observe, that I think it will be of advantage to you, to make your arrangements out of the Cannon, originally belonging to the Colony and those presented it by ongress, and not to count on those brought from Ticonderoga and which are left, tho' Congress are willing to lend them. For it is more than probable they may be wanted elsewhere, and if they should; It will derange your order and lay you under the necessity of providing others and Carriages, at a time when it may be Inconvenient and when they may be most useful. I am &c.

60. On this same day, Robert Hanson Harrison, by direction of the Commander in Chief, wrote to Maj. Gen. Artemas Ward, setting Ward aright as to the regiments on Bunker Hill and Dorchester Heights. The committee of the Massachusetts Legislature apparently had influenced Ward in regard to these regiments as Washington has noted, in silver-point, upon the letter of May 3 from the committee: "Genl. Washington would remark upon above that one of the 5 Regiments left at Boston was compleat and that the other 4 contained the average of those brought away." (See Washington's letter to the committee of the Massachusetts Legislature, May 9, 1776, *ante*.)

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 17, 1776.

Sir: I This moment received, by Express from Genl. Schuyler, an Account of the Melancholly prospect and reverse of our Affairs in Canada, and presuming the Letters, which accompanies this, will give Congress full information upon the Subject, I shall only add, that General Schuyler in pursuance of orders from the Honorable Commissioners, has directed General Sullivan to halt his Brigade, as a further reinforcement, on account of the scarcity of Provisions, would not relieve, but contribute greatly to distress our Troops already in Canada. Before he received these orders the whole of the

Brigade, except Dayton and Wayne's Regiments had left Albany, but I suppose he will be able to stop their march.

By my Letter of the 15th. Instant, Congress will perceive the quantity of Pork already gone from hence, and the Commissary has assured me, that he will forward a further supply as soon as it can be possibly collected. I had also directed five Tons of Lead to be sent General Schuyler for the Canada expedition, before I received this unfortunate Account, which was as much as could be spared at this Time, our Stock being inconsiderable in proportion to the demand we may reasonably expect for it, and shall do everything in my power to

relieve our Affairs from their present distressed and melancholy situation in that Quarter, which occur to me and appear necessary.

I am also to acknowledge the receipt of your favors of the 10th. and 13th. Instant, with their several Inclosures. The Money mentioned in the Latter came safe to the Pay Master's Hands. I have the Honor etc.⁶⁴

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, May 17, 1776.

Dear Sir: I this Morning received your Favour of the 13th. Inst. with it's Inclosures, conveying Intelligence of the melancholy Situation of our Affairs in Canada, and am not without my Fears, I confess, that the Prospect we had of possessing that Country, of so much Importance in the present Controversy, is almost over, or at least, that it will be effected with much more Difficulty, and Effusion of Blood than were necessary, had our Exertions been timely applied. However we must not despair. A manly and spirited Opposition, can only ensure Success, and prevent the Enemy from improving the Advantage they have obtained.

I have forwarded the Letters to Congress, and their Answer to you and the Honble Commissioners, I will transmit you, as soon as they come to Hand.

I am fully sensible that this unfortunate Event has greatly deranged your Schemes, and will involve you in Difficulties only to be

64. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

obviated by your Zeal and Assiduity, which I am well satisfied will not be wanting in this or any other Instance, where the Good of your Country require them.

Notwithstanding the most diligent Pains, but a small Part of the Nails you wrote for, is yet collected, nor will there be a Possibility of getting half the Quantity. The Quarter Master expects that they will be here to Day, when they will be instantly forwarded with the five Ton of Lead. I am, etc.

P.S. The Nails are embarked 27½ Casks. You have the acct. and Quality inclosed, with Thos. Warner's Receipt, and also for 5 Tons of Lead.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN SULLIVAN

New York, May 17, 1776.

Dr. Sir: Your Favour of the 14th. Inst. I received this Morning and am exceedingly sorry for the sad Reverse of Fortune in our Affairs in Canada. They are rather alarming; but I still hope our vigorous Exertions will be attended with Success, notwithstanding the present unpromising Appearances, and that we shall yet acquire and maintain Possession of that Country, so important to us in the present Contest.

I have transmitted the Intelligence to Congress with your Orders from General Schuyler, whose Directions you must follow, 'till I send you their Determination, or my Commands to the contrary. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 18, 1776.

Sir: I do myself the Honor to transmit to you the inclosed Letters and papers which I received this Morning, in the State they now are, and which contain sundry

matters of Intelligence of the most Interesting nature.

As the consideration of them may lead to important consequences and the adoption of several measures in the Military Line, I have thought It advisable for General Gates to attend Congress who will follow to morrow, and satisfy and explain to them, some points they may wish to be informed

of, in the course of their deliberations not having an Opportunity at this Time to submit to them my thoughts upon these Interesting Accounts.⁶⁶ I have &ca.⁶⁷

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 19, 1776.

Sir: This will be delivered you by General Gates who sets out this Morning for Congress, agreeable to my Letter of Yesterday.

I have committed to him the Heads of sundry matters to lay before Congress for their consideration, which from the Interesting Intelligence contained in my last, appears to me of the utmost Importance, and to demand their most early and serious attention.

Sensible that I have omitted to set down many things necessary and which probably when deliberating they wish to be acquainted with, and not conceiving myself at Liberty to depart my post, tho' to attend them, without their previous approbation,⁷⁰ I have requested General Gates to subjoin such hints of his own as he may apprehend material. His Military experience and intimate acquaintance with the situation of our Affairs, will enable him to give Congress the fullest satisfaction about the measures necessary to be adopted at this alarming crisis,

66. The important papers consisted of intelligence from England, and copies of the treaties made by that nation with the Duke of Brunswick, the Landgrave of Hesse Cassel, and the Count of Hanau for troops to be sent to America. The papers were referral to a committee consisting of John Adams, William Livingston, Thomas Jefferson, Richard Henry Lee, and Roger Sherman, who were directed to publish such extracts of the intelligence as they thought proper. This publication was made in the *Pennsylvania Gazette* of May 22; the *Pennsylvania Evening Post* of May 23; and the *Pennsylvania Ledger* of May 25. The treaties also appeared in the supplements of the *Pennsylvania Journal* of May 24, and *Pennsylvania Packet* of May 27. They are also printed in Force's *American Archives*, Fourth Series, vol. 6, 271-277.

67. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison. It was read in Congress on May 21, the same time Washington's letters of May 19 and 20 were read.

70. Congress had already (May 16) requested Washington's attendance.

and with his Zeal and attachment to the Cause of America, have a claim to their Notice and favors.

When Congress shall have come to a determination on the Subject of this Letter and such parts of my former Letters, as have not been determined on, you will be pleased to honor me with the result.

I am &ca.⁷¹

To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE

New York, May 19, 1776.

Sir: Having reason to believe from Intelligence lately received, that the Time is not far distant when the arrival of a considerable Armament may be expected, I must again repeat my Applications on the subject of Arms, and intreat your Honble. Body to use their utmost exertions, that a supply May be obtained for the Regiments of this Colony, which in General are extremely deficient, some of them almost destitute. I trust your own feelings will readily suggest, I have sufficient cause of anxiety and concern upon this occasion, and will furnish an Apology for my so often troubling you. I have tried, I have pursued every Measure my Judgment led to, without being able to procure a sufficient Quantity; nor have I any power to apply to but you, from which I can promise myself the least prospect of Success.

I would also take the Liberty of praying

71. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

your endeavours to procure a Quantity of Intrenching Tools, Vizt. Spades and Shovels; as our operations go on much slower than they would, If we had more of them; which at a crisis like this, is exceedingly alarming, when the utmost labour and Industry will not more than Compleat the Necessary Works of defence, by the time the Enemy may Attempt an Invasion. The Quarter Master Assures me that he has taken every possible method in his power to get them, but without Success, which is the reason of my requesting an exertion of your Interest. I am, etc.

To ROBERT MORRIS⁷⁵

New York, May 20, 1776.

Sir: I received your favors of the 11th. and 16th. Instant; the former respecting powder for which you have inclosed the Commissary's receipt, as to the Number of Barrels, but not of the Contents, no Invoice thereof having been delivered either to me or him, which certainly should have been sent for the detection of any fraudulent practices, if any were committed.

The Commissary will expect one, and that they will always accompany such Stores as may be transmitted in Future: The latter, about Arms at Rhode Island, covering Letters for the Gentlemen in whose possession they are, having read, I have sealed and forwarded to them, with directions to send the musquets immediately, being in great want. I am &ca.

75. Then a member of the Secret Committee of Congress.

***To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS**

New York, May 20, 1776.

Sir: Your favour of the 16th. with several resolution's of Congress, therein Inclosed, I had not the honor to receive 'till last night; before the receipt, I did not think myself at liberty to wait on Congress, altho' I wish'd to do it, and therefore, the more readily consented to General Gates's attendance; as I knew there were many matters which could be better explaind in a personal Interview than in whole Volumes of Letters. He accordingly set out for Phila. yesterday Morning, and must have been too far advancd on his journey (as he proposed expedition) to be over taken. I shall, if I can settle some matters, which are in agitation with the Provincial Congress here, follow to morrow, or next day; and therefore with every Sentiment of regard, attachment and gratitude to Congress for their kind attention to the means which they may think conducive to my health, and with particular thanks to you for the politeness of your Invitation to your House,⁷⁴ conclude Dear Sir, &ca.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, May 21, 1776.

Sir: The Bearer, Mr. Mersay being at Quebec when the Garrison Sallied and Obliged our Troops to an

74. The invitation was not accepted by Washington.

abandonment of the Siege and a precipitate retreat; I have taken the Liberty to refer him to you for examination, that Congress may have such further Information of this unfortunate Event as he possesses. I have the Honor &ca.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, May 21, 1776.

Dear Sir: I have inclosed for your Perusal Copies of two Informations, and a Letter I received on Saturday last from the Committee of King's District by the Hands of a Martin Bebee, who says he is their Clerk and was sent Express.

From these you will readily discover the diabolical and insidious Arts and Schemes carrying on by the Tories and Friends to Government, to raise Distrust, Dissensions and Divisions among us.

Having the utmost Confidence in your Integrity, and the most incontestible Proof of your great Attachment to our common Country and its Interest, I could not but look upon the Charge against you with an Eye of Disbelief, and Sentiments of Detestation and Abhorrence, nor should I have troubled you with the Matter, had I not been informed that Copies were sent to different Committees and to Governor Trumbull, which I conceived would get abroad, and that you, (should you find that I had been furnished with them) would consider my suppressing them, as an Evidence of my Belief, or at best of my Doubts of the Charges.

The Confidence and Assurance I have of the Injustice and Infamy of the Charges against the Convention, obliged me also to lay the Matter before them; least my not doing it, should be construed a Distrust by them of their Zeal, and promote the Views of the Tories; who, to

excite Disorder and Confusion, judge it essential, to involve those in high Departments in a Share of the Plot, which is not unlikely to be true in some Parts, believing that our internal Enemies have many Projects in Contemplation, to subvert our Liberties.⁷⁷

Before I conclude, I would mention that some Officers called upon me a few Days ago, having your Permit to go to Pensylvania and settle some Affairs there. This Licence, when there is really Business, is certainly countenanced by Humanity and Generosity; but nevertheless should not be indulged, and I hope will not be granted in future, as it gives them an Opportunity of getting Intelligence of all our Operations; of forming Opinions of our Strength, the Places proper for Attack and settling a Channel of Correspondence with the disaffected, by which our Enemies may and will be furnished

with full Accounts of our Designs, and every Thing that can promote their Service and injure ours. There is but little Reason to believe, nay we are certain, they will not conduct themselves upon Principles of the strictest Honour for the Favors done them but will when in their Power, exercise every Matter that can operate to our Prejudice. I am, Sir, &c.

To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE

New York, May 21, 1776.

Gentn: Congress having been pleased to request my attendance at Philadelphia, to advise with them on the Situation of affairs and being about to set out immediately; I judged it proper to give Major Genl. Putnam Instructions similar to those I have the honor to inclose you; for the regulation of his Conduct, in case you

77. Sparks enlarges on the prejudice of New England against Schuyler in his *Writings of Washington*, Appendix XV, vol. 3, but does not go into the causes thoroughly, though he prints several documents. (Ford reprints these as a footnote.) The Berkshire country was fearful of a British advance, after the Quebec defeat, and the New Hampshire Grants consulted their grievances against New York as a difficulty in addition to their fears of the British. The feeling behind this outburst against Schuyler, later merged with Gates's New England popularity and ended in Schuyler being superseded. This frontier prejudice was an outer fringe of a New England state of mind that developed later into the demonstration known as the Conway Cabal, but the Berkshire hysteria of 1776 was not, of course, connected with the cabal except through the New Hampshire Grants movement.

come to any determination respecting the Tories here and on Long Island and should have occasion for Military assistance, to carry it into execution. I have &ca.

To MAJOR GENERAL ISRAEL PUTNAM

Amboy, May 22, 1776.

Sir: Your Letter of the last Night with the Dispatches from Canada, came to my Hands at Woodbridge this Morning.

I wish that the Information given you by Captain Goforth,⁸⁴ respecting the Number of Prisoners taken may prove true. What he told you about the Enemy's not having sallied out, differs widely from General Thomas's Account of that Affair.

You will please to give every Assistance which General Schuyler requires, that may be in your Power, and least you may not have kept a Copy of his Letter, I will transcribe that Paragraph, which contains his Demand. "Intrenching Tools of every Kind will be wanted, more Powder, Lead, and Cannon Ball, and guns for the Vessels on Lake Champlain. Rigging,

84. Capt. William Goforth, of the First New York Regiment.

Sail-Cloth, and Sail Makers to be sent up."

For intrenching Tools, Rigging, Sail Cloth, and Sail Makers, I would have you apply immediately to the Provincial Congress, who will probably be able to procure them for you. Some of the Members mentioned to me, that they could procure a Quantity of Tools, of which you will send off as many as you can spare. You must take Care not to leave yourself destitute.

I sent five Tons of Lead forward, which General Schuyler knew not of: However I would have you examine what Quantity there is in store; and if you can spare it send up two tons more.

As to the Cannon Ball and Guns, you will consult with Colo. Knox, who must judge what Sort of each is necessary, and send them up with the other Articles.

I have already spoke to the Commissary General to send off as much salt Provisions as he could; but you must urge him on this Head, as they are in very great Want, and have no other Place to depend on but what goes from New York. He must lay in all he can get, to supply the Quantity which he sends up, for he must take Care to keep up his Stock.

It was a Misfortune, indeed, that the Vessel with Powder and Arms should fall into the Enemy's Hands.

Let the Committee by all Means have the Petriauger⁸⁵ to cruize off the Back of the Island. The sooner she is out the better, as more Vessels with these Articles may be daily expected. I am etc.

P.S. Please to forward the inclosed by the first Express; or the Post which goes to Albany. Send two Tons of Powder, which will serve until we can send a further Supply.

85. The Americanization of piragua, a large flatboat, decked in at each end, propelled by oars and two demountable masts with leg-of-mutton sails. It could carry from 25 to 35 tons.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

Amboy, May 22, 1776.

Dear Sir: Congress having been pleased to request my Attendance at Philadelphia, to advise with them on the Situation of our Affairs, and of such Measures as may be necessary to adopt for this Campaign, I had got thus far on my Journey, when I called to view the Ground, and such Places on Staten Island, contiguous to it, as may be proper for Works of Defence; when your Favor of the 16th. Inst. with its several Inclosures came to Hand.

I am exceedingly concerned for the Distress of our Troops in Canada, and as I informed you heretofore, have been very importunate with the Commissary to forward all the Provisions in his Power; in Consequence of which he has sent a good Deal on, and I shall again repeat my Orders, and enjoin him to continue his Supplies as largely and expeditiously as possible.

I wrote you on the 17th. Inst. and am hopeful the 27 1/2 Casks of Nails, which were all that could be got with the 5 Tons of Lead then sent, will have reached you, or got to Albany, from whence they will be forwarded: and in a Letter to General Putnam have directed him to examine our Stock of the latter, and to furnish you with a further Quantity, if it can be spared. At Philadelphia I will try to get a Supply. I have also directed him, to send you two Tons more of Powder and such intrenching Tools as can be possibly spared or procured from the Convention, in Consequence of an Application I made two or three Days since. We are deficient in these, not having a sufficiency to carry on the Works for the Defence of New York, with the Expedition I wish, or the

Exigency of the Times demands.

In Respect to Cannon Shot and Guns for the Vessels in the Lake, I have requested him to consult with Colo. Knox, and with the Convention about Sail Cloth &c. and if any of them can be spared or procured, that they be immediately sent you.

Our situation respecting the Indians is delicate and embarrassing. They are attached to Johnson,⁸³ who is our Enemy. Policy and Prudence on the one Hand, suggest the Necessity of seizing him and every Friend of Government; on the other, if he is apprehended, their will be Danger of incurring

their Resentment. I hope the Committee will conduct the Matter in the least exceptionable Manner, and in that Way that shall most advance the public Good.

I observe by the Minutes of a Council of War, Genl. Thomas's Letter and that of Messrs. Carrol and Chase to Doctor Franklin, that our Troops cannot make a Stand at De Chambault as I had hoped. I wish it were practicable; For most certainly, the lower down the River we can maintain our Post, the more important will the Advantages resulting from it be. Considering all the Country below us as lost, and that there may be some Prospect of gaining that above from whence we might draw Supplies in some Degree, and have the Friendship and Assistance of the Inhabitants; it is certain we should make a stand, as low down as we can, so as not to have a Retreat cut off in Case of Necessity, or an Opportunity of receiving Provisions: but

83. Sir John Johnson, son of Sir William Johnson. He declined to accept his father's Indian appointments, which were taken over by Guy Johnson, a nephew of Sir William. Sir John assembled about 300 of his Scotch tenants and marched from Johnson Hall to Canada to escape arrest. He was colonel of a British provincial regiment, and took part in the attack on Fort Stanwix, N.Y. He is accused of responsibility for the massacre at Cherry Valley, N.Y., and other frontier raids.

unacquainted as I am with the Country, I cannot undertake to say where it should be, not doubting and hoping that every Thing for the best will be done. I am, etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL JOHN THOMAS

Philadelphia, May 24, 1776.

Sir: I received your Favor of the 8th. Inst. with it's Inclosures, confirming the melancholy Intelligence I had before heard, of your having been obliged to raise the Siege of Quebec, and to make a precipitate Retreat, with the Loss of the Cannon in the Batteaus, and Interception of the Powder going from General Schuyler.

This unfortunate Affair has given a sad Shock to our Schemes in that Quarter; and blasted the Hope we entertained of reducing that Fortress, and the whole of Canada to our Possession.

From your Representation, Things must have been found in great Disorder, and such as to have made a Retreat almost inevitable; but nevertheless it is hoped you will be able to make a good Stand yet, and by that Means secure a large or all the upper Part of the Country. That being a Matter of the utmost Importance in the present Contest, it is my Wish and that of Congress, that you take an

advantageous Post, as far down the River as possible, so as not to preclude you from a Retreat, if it should be ever necessary, or from getting

proper Supplies of Provision. The lower down you can maintain a Stand, the more advantageous will it be, as all the Country above will most probably take Part with us, and from which we may draw some Assistance and Support, and considering all below as entirely within the Power of the Enemy and of Course in their Favour.

This Misfortune must be repaired, if possible, by our more vigorous Exertions; and trusting that nothing will be wanting on your Part, or in your Power to advance our Country's Cause. I am, &c.

To MAJOR GENERAL ISRAEL PUTNAM

Philadelphia, May 28, 1776.

Sir: I received yours of the 24th. Inst. with it's several Inclosures, and the Letter and Invoice from General Ward, giving Intelligence of the fortunate Capture made by our armed Vessels, on which Event you have my Congratulations.

I have wrote Genl. Ward, as you will see by the inclosed Letter, (which having read, you will seal and send

by Post) to send forward to New York Colo. Putnam's Demands, and also such Articles as Colo. Knox may apply for, out of the Cargo taken. In like Manner I have desired him to send me as soon as possible, Part of the Powder, and eight Hundred of the Carbines which will greatly assist in making up the Defficiency in this Instance. As to the Plan⁹⁸ for employing the Armed Vessels, I have no Objection to it's being adopted, provided it will not frustrate the main Design for which they were fitted out. That I would by no Means have injured, as it is a Matter of much Importance to prevent a Correspondence between the disaffected and the Enemy and the latter from getting Supplies of Provision; but if this End can be answered, and the other Advantages in the Plan mentioned, it is certainly an eligible one.

The great Variety of Business in which Congress are engaged, has prevented our settling what I was requested to attend for, tho' we have made several Attempts, and a Committee has been appointed for the Purpose Day after Day,⁹⁹ nor can I say with Precision when I shall be at Liberty to return. I must, therefore, pray your Attention and Vigilance to every necessary Work and further, if you should receive, before I come, certain Advices and such as you can rely on, of the Enemy's

being on the Coast or approaching New York, that you inform me thereof by Express, as early as possible. I do not wish an Alarm to be given me without Foundation; but as soon as you are certified of their coming, that it be instantly communicated to me, and Orders given the Express who comes, to bespeak at the different necessary Stages on the Road, as many Horses, as may be proper for facilitating my Return, and that of the Gentlemen with me, with the greatest Expedition. I am, etc.

P.S. I desire you'll speak to the several Colls., and hurry them to get their colours done.

98. The plan for using the armed vessels in the Hudson River and New York Bay accompanies Putnam's letter to Washington (May 24), which is in the *Washington Papers*. The names and stations of the various armed vessels are there given.

99. The committee was appointed on May 23 to confer with General Washington, Maj. Gen. Horatio Gates, and Brig. Gen. Thomas Mifflin, on the Canadian situation. It consisted of Benjamin Harrison, Richard Henry Lee, John Adams, James Wilson, and Edward Rutledge. May 24 Robert R. Livingston was added. May 25 a new committee of conference on a plan of campaign, consisting of Harrison, Lee, Adams, Wilson, Livingston, William Whipple, Roger Sherman, Stephen Hopkins, William Livingston, George Read, Matthew Tilghman, Joseph Hewes, Arthur Middleton, and Lyman Hall, was appointed. A report was rendered on May 29 advising the issue of an address to the inhabitants of the United States. May 30 a further report was brought in. May 31 another report was made. June 1 further consideration was given the matter, and eight battalions for Canada ordered raised by Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Hampshire, and New York. June 3 Washington was empowered to employ Indians in Canada; 13,800 militia from Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, and New Jersey were authorized to reenforce New York; Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Delaware were to furnish 10,000 more for a flying camp, to serve until December 1. Various other measures were adopted, for which the *Journals of the Continental Congress* should be consulted. Washington was excused on June 3 and was back in New York on June 6.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

Philadelphia, May 28, 1776.

Sir: On Saturday Morning I was favoured with yours of the 17th. Inst., giving the agreeable Intelligence of the important and valuable Prize, made by the armed Schooners in the Continental Service, and am hopeful, that if a vigilant Look out is kept, that others not less valuable, will fall into our Hands.

Congress having passed a Resolve respecting this Cargo, as you will see by the inclosed Copy,⁹⁶ I desire that you will immediately forward to New York, eight Hundred of the Carbines and the Residue have put into some good and secure Place, not to be disposed of 'till further Directions, unless the Recruits raising to compleat the five Regiments left at Boston, should be in Want, in which Case you may supply the Deficiency out of them.

I also request that you will directly forward to New York, 400 Barrels of the Powder, and have the Remainder of it, sent to some Place of Security in the Country, not too contiguous to Boston, there to be kept under a good and trusty Guard 'till it shall be disposed of; apprehending it imprudent that more should remain in Boston than may be absolutely necessary for Fear of Accidents, tho' I do not think any Attempts will be made against it by the Enemy.

You will forward too, the Lead wrote for by General Putnam, and such Articles out of the Cargo as Colo. Knox and Colonel Putnam shall respectively apply for, and have the Rest properly secured.

As to the two Hundred Carbines, that are to remain at Boston, I do not mean that they are to be put into the Hands of the Recruits raising to compleat the old Regiments, but in Case of absolute Necessity, such as the Appearance of an Invasion, or the like, and that every possible Method should be used for them to procure Arms without depending on these.

I shall be glad of your returning to the

96. This was one of the supply ships from Cork, captured by the *Franklin*.

Massachusetts Government the Powder they have lent the Continent; as by this fortunate Capture we are enabled to pay our Debts in that Way⁹⁷ I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Philadelphia, June 3, 1776.

Sir: I have perused the Petition preferred by the Independent Corps of Boston and beg leave to Inform Congress, that the Five Regiments there are extremely deficient in Arms, as are many other Regiments in Continental pay, and submit to their consideration, whether any part of the Arms lately taken, under these circumstances should be delivered to the Gentlemen applying for them,

determining at the same time whatever decision Congress may come to, respecting them, will be agreeable to me and be literally complied with. I have &ca.¹⁰

To MAJOR GENERAL ISRAEL PUTNAM

Philadelphia, June 3, 1776.

Dear Sir: I received your Favor by Yesterday Evening's Express with the several Letters and Intelligence from General Schuyler and am much concerned for the further Misfortunes that have attended our Arms in Canada. I have laid the whole before Congress, who had before resolved to send a considerable Augmentation to our Army there and doubt not that General Schuyler may receive Assistance from the Militias most convenient to him, for securing the different Passes and Communications 'till they can be releived.

As to sending a Reinforcement from New York, neither Policy or Prudence will justify it, as we have the strongest

97. The resolve of May 25, 1775, placed the disposal of any arms and military stores captured in prizes in the hands of the Commander in Chief.

10. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

Reasons to believe the Day not far distant when a large Armament will arrive; and vigorously attempt an Impression there; to oppose which the Forces we have will not be more than equal, if sufficient.

Congress have determined on building sundry Gondolas and Fire Rafts, to prevent the Men of War and Enemy's Ships from coming into the New York Bay or Narrows.¹¹ I must therefore request, that you make Inquiry after Carpenters, and procure all you can, with Materials necessary for building them, that they may go on with all possible Expedition, as soon as the Person arrives from hence, whom I have employed to superintend the Work. He will be there in a Day or two. I am &c.

To COLONEL LACHLIN McINTOSH

Philadelphia, June 4, 1776.

Sir: I received your Favor of the 16th. of Feby.¹² by Yesterday's Post, with it's Inclosure, for which and the Information respecting the State of your Province, I return you my Thanks.

I am exceedingly sorry for the Difficulties you have had to encounter, and that they are not yet all at an End; but I am hopeful, by your Perseverance and Activity, they will be surmounted, and that Things will assume a more pleasing Appearance.

Being far removed from the Department you are in, it will be impossible for me to know or transmit the Orders necessary for regulating your Battallion.

11. On May 30 Congress resolved that the Commander in Chief should build all fire rafts, boats, row galleys, etc., needed for the defense of New York.

12. McIntosh's letter, dated Feb. 16, 1776, at Savannah, Ga., is in the *Washington Papers*. It is printed in Sparks's *Letters to Washington*, vol. 1, p. 148.

Reasons to believe the Day not far distant when a large Armament will arrive; and vigorously attempt an Impression there; to oppos I must, therefore, refer you to Majr. Genl. Lee, who has been appointed to command in the southern District, and to Brigr. Genl. Armstrong¹³ in South Carolina, who are more immediately over you. They will give you, from Time to Time, such Instructions as appear to them necessary, proper, and likely to advance the public Good, which you must make the Rule of your Conduct.

You will be particular and punctual in making your Returns to these Gentlemen, who will forward them to me; and trusting that every Thing in your Power, will be done to promote the Common Cause and Interest of the United Colonies. I am etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 7, 1776.

Sir: I do myself the honor to inform Congress, that I arrived here yesterday afternoon about one O'Clock and found all in a state of Peace and quiet. I had not time to view the works which were carrying on and those ordered to be begun when I went away, but have reason to beleive, from the reports of such of the General and other officers I had the pleasure to see, that they have been prosecuted and forwarded, with all possible diligence and dispatch.

I am much concerned for the situation of our Affairs in Canada and am fearful 'ere this, It is much worse than was first reported at Philadelphia. The Intelligence from thence in a Letter from Captain Wilkinson of the 2d Regiment, to General Greene, is truly alarming; it not only confirms the Account of Col. Bedel and Major Sherburne's defeat, but seems to forebode General

13. Brig. Gen. John Armstrong, of Pennsylvania.

Arnold's with the Loss of Montreal I have Inclosed a Copy of the Letter, which will but too well shew that there is foundation for my apprehensions.

On Wednesday Evening, I received an Express from General Schuyler, with sundry papers respecting Sir John Johnson, which I have not time to copy as the post is just going off, but will do myself the honor of transmitting you them as soon as I possibly can.²⁴

Before I left Philadelphia, I employed a person to superintend the Building the Gondolas which Congress had resolved on for this place; he is arrived and all things seem to be in a proper Channel for facilitating the work; but when they are done, we shall be in much want of Guns, having never received any of those taken by Commodore Hopkins. Be pleased to remember me to Congress with the utmost respect; and I am etc.

P. S. I this minute received your favor of the 5th Inst. I am in need of Commissions and beg Congress to point out precisely the line I am to pursue in filling them up. this I mentioned in my Letter of the 11 Ulto. I am much pleased at the fortunate Captures and the generous conduct of the owners and masters for the tender of the money to Congress.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 7, 1776.

Dear Sir: I have not Time to answer your two last Favours minutely, but only to acknowledge the Receipt of them; being just returned from Philadelphia, and the Post about to depart this Morning.

The Situation of our Affairs in Canada is truly alarming, and I greatly fear, from the Intelligence transmitted from thence by Capt. Wilkinson²² to General Greene, that 'ere this we have sustained further and greater Misfortunes, than what happened when

24. Sir John Johnson resided at Johnstown, in Tryon County, about 40 miles northwest of Albany, N.Y., and possessed large patrimonial estates in that neighborhood. Adhering to the Royal cause, and having many of the Indians in his influence, as well as two or three hundred Highlanders, who were his tenants, an eye was kept upon his conduct. In January he had given his parole that he would take no part against the Colonies. General Schuyler received such intelligence as convinced him that Sir John was secretly instigating the Indians, by which he had virtually broken his parole, and was likely to produce much mischief on the frontiers. To prevent this he thought it advisable to secure Sir John and quell the rising spirit of hostility which he was fomenting among the inhabitants and Indians in that quarter. Col. Elias Dayton, with a part of his regiment, was sent to make the arrest. But Sir John escaped to the westward and sought security with the Indians and a small British force on the Lakes. Sir John's papers were examined by Colonel Dayton, in compliance with his orders, and Lady Johnson was removed to Albany, where she was retained as a kind of hostage for the peaceable conduct of her husband. In the January following Sir John Johnson found his way to New York City, then in possession of the British Army.— *Sparks*.

22. Capt. James Wilkinson. As this time he was an aide to Arnold; later he was an aide to Gates.

you wrote. I have inclosed you a Copy of his Letter, by which you will see I have too much Ground for my Concern, and I sincerely wish the next Letters from the Northward, may not contain melancholy Advices of General Arnold's Defeat and the Loss of Montreal.

The most vigorous Exertions will be necessary, to retrieve our Circumstances there and I am hopeful you will strain every Nerve for that Purpose. Unless it can be now done Canada will be lost for ever; the fatal Consequences of which every one must feel.

I have inclosed you a Copy of a Resolve of Congress for reinforcing the Army in Canada, and keeping up the Communication with that Province. I hope the several Colonies will immediately furnish their Quotas of Men, which, or as many of them as may be necessary, I should imagine had better be employed at the Communications, and all the inlisted Soldiers sent forward to Canada.

You have also another Resolution for employing and engaging a Number of Indians in the Service.²³ Tho' Congress have not particularised the Mode for raising and engaging them, I would have you, and the Commissioners appointd. for Indian Affairs, pursue such Measures for the Purpose, as to you may seem best for securing their Friendship and Service. If a smaller Number than 2000 will do I would not advise more to be embodied than may be necessary.

If your Presence or Direction at St. John's or any Post in Canada could be of Service and tend to put our Affairs in a better Channel than

23. As before noted, Congress had voted the raising of Indians for the Canada service. The number authorized was 2,000. General Schuyler, when informed, very naturally inquired where they were to be found, and added that, instead of raising this number for the American cause, he thought that if they could be prevented from joining the enemy it was more than could be expected. Schuyler did, however, succeed in negotiating a treaty with the western New York Indians at German Flats shortly after this.

they now are, I would wish you to go; as General Thomas is down in the small Pox; but I do not mean to direct or request you to do it, if you think by remaining where you are, or not going, will be of more public Advantage, or that the Cause will be injured by doing it. You will be governed by such Measures as appear to you best, and the Circumstances of our Affairs under your Management, and those in Canada, with which you must be much better acquainted than I am, or can possibly be, at this Distance.

It is probable your Presence may be necessary and wanted at the Negotiation with the Indians, which will be one Cause to prevent your going. I am, Sir, &c.

To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE

New York, June 7, 1776.

Gentn.: I suppose you have received from the Congress two Resolutions, for the reinforcement of our Army in Canada; but, least you should not be apprized of them, I take the liberty to inclose you a Copy. I most earnestly request, you will exert every endeavour, to furnish the Quota expected from your Province, as speedily as possible. General Schuyler is extremely importunate for a Supply of Men, and it is altogether out of my power to afford them from the Troops here; as they by no means exceed the Number requisite for the defence of this Place. I have the honor to be, etc.

To BENJAMIN HARRISON, JOHN ADAMS AND WILLIAM WHIPPLE³⁰

New York, June 8, 1776.

Gentlemen: In Answer to your Favor of the 14th. instant in which you request me to employ proper Persons to survey the Harbour, Fortifications &ca. of Cape Ann, and of New London, I informed you of my writing to Colonel Richard Gridley and Colonel Henry Knox, to undertake the Business and promised to transmit you their report, as soon as it should come to hand.³¹ I accordingly have the Pleasure to enclose you Colonel Gridley's

30. A committee of Congress.

31. See Washington's letter to Benjamin Harrison, John Adams, and William Whipple, Apr. 22, 1776, *ante*.

report of the Harbour and Works of New London, with the several Plans he has taken, which appears to be accurate and well done. I have the Honor to be, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 8, 1776.

Sir: In my Letter of Yesterday, which I had the honor of addressing you and which was designed to have come by Post but was prevented by his Departure before the usual time, I mentioned my having received by Express a Letter and sundry Papers from General Schuyler respecting Sir John Johnston, Copies of which I herewith transmit for your Inspection and Perusal, they wall shew you what Measures were planned and attempted for apprehending him and securing the Highlanders in Tryon County.

Having heard that the Troops at Boston are extremely uneasy and almost mutinous for want of Pay (several Months of which are now due), I must take the Liberty to repeat a Question contained in my Letter of the 5th Ult., What mode is to be adopted respecting it, Whether is Money to be sent from hence by the Pay Master General, or some Person, subordinate to him, to be appointed there for that Purpose? I expected some direction would

have been given in this instance long 'ere this, from what was contained in yours accompanying, or about the time of the last remittance. I presume it has been omitted by reason of the Multiplicity of important Business before the Congress.

In perusing the several Resolves you honored me with when at Philadelphia, and since my return, I find one allowing a Chief Engineer for the Army in a seperate Department. The Service requiring

many of them, I wish Congress, if they know any Persons skilled in the Business, would appoint them. General Schuyler has frequently applied and suggested the Necessity of having some in Canada. I myself know of none.

I also find there is a resolve of the third of June for taking Indians into service which if literally pursued confines them to that in Canada. Is that the meaning of Congress, or that the Commander in Chief may order their Service to any place he may think necessary?

In respect to establishing Expresses between the several Continental Posts, Who is to do it? The Resolve does not say. Is it expected by Congress that I should? Whoever the Work is assigned to, I think should execute it with the utmost dispatch. The late imperfect and contradictory Accounts respecting our Defeat at the Cedars²⁷ strongly point out the Necessity there is for it. No Intelligence is yet come from any Officer in command there, and most probably for want of a proper Channel to convey it, though this Misfortune happened so long ago. When I had the Honor of being in Congress, If I mistake not, I heard a Resolve read, or was told of one, allowing the New York Troops the same pay of others in the Continental Service. This, if any such

27. Col. Timothy Bedel, of New Hampshire, had been sent by Arnold to hold a narrow pass known as The Cedars, about 45 miles above Montreal. An English force appearing, Bedel went to Montreal for reenforcements, and on May 19 Maj. Isaac Butterfield, whom he had left in charge, surrendered almost without a show of fighting. Some reinforcements from Arnold, under the command of Maj. Henry Sherburne, were met and routed.— *Ford*.

I do not find, and, if there is not such a one, I shall be under some Embarrassment, how to pay the Militia to be provided by this Province.

The Resolve providing them says, “they are to be paid whilst in service as other Troops here” but if those enlisted heretofore in this Province, are to receive according to the first Establishment, it is a matter of Doubt what the Militia are to have.²⁸

Before this comes to hand, a hand Bill, containing an Account of a Victory gained by General Arnold over the Party that had defeated Colonel Bedel and Major Sherburne will most probably have reached you; I have enquired into the Authenticity of this fortunate report, and have found there is no Dependence to be put in it, nor do I believe it deserving of the least Credit; I shall be happy not to hear the Reverse.²⁹

P.S. If Congress have come to any resolution about an allowance to induce men to reinlist, you will please to favor me with it, as the Time the Rifle Regiment is engaged for is just expired. As the Militia will be coming in, and they will be in much need of covering, please to have all the Tents and the Cloth proper for making them that can be procured, forwarded as soon as possible.

28. Resolved, "That the pay of the continental troops, in the middle department, be henceforth the same as that of the troops in the eastern." (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*, June 10, 1776.) The pay of the eastern forces being higher than that allowed those of New York, it was found that many from New York were enlisting in the regiments of New England. The Congress of New York, upon receiving a requisition from the Continental Congress for more troops, sent Gouverneur Morris to Philadelphia to determine, if possible, this "odious discrimination," with the above result.— *Ford*.

29. Arnold had marched against the British with the object of regaining by force the 470 Americans captured in the two engagements at The Cedars, but the British officer asserted that a massacre must ensue upon such an attempt, and Arnold was forced to be content with obtaining the Americans (save four officers retained as hostages) on the condition of returning an equal number of British prisoners. This agreement was set aside by Congress.— *Ford*. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*, July 10, 1776.)

To JOSEPH TRUMBULL

Head Quarters, New York, June 9, 1776.

Sir: I herewith transmit you the Resolutions of Congress for several Augmentations of the Army.

With Respect to Canada, I must inform you, that the last Accounts abound with Complaints of the deplorable Scarcity of Provisions which our Men labour under and mention the Impossibility of procuring Relief in that Colony. You will, therefore, with all Expedition, forward a Supply of Meat and Flour (particularly of the latter) to Albany.

As there is a Reinforcement of six Thousand Men shortly to be sent to Canada, there is a Prospect of the Want of Necessaries being still increased; in making Provision for the Troops already there, you must have a View to the Augmentation, which, I fear, will be sent before any Preparation can be made for them, by Mr. Price.

As to the flying Camp, it is probable, it's first Station will be in the Neighbourhood of Amboy. I am &c.

P.S. I am informed, that several Merchants are about to purchase Salt Pork for Exportation, and I would recommend it to you, immediately to apply to the Provincial Congress to take some Measures to prevent them; as there is not only a Probability that it may fall into the Hands of the Enemy, but we may ere long experience the Want of it ourselves.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 9, 1776.

Sir: I was honored Yesterday, with your favor of the 7th. instant with its inclosures. When Doctor Potts³⁷ arrives, I shall order him to Canada or Lake George, as may appear most proper. It is certainly necessary that he or Doctor Stringer should go to the former. The resolve respecting General Wooster's recall, I will immediately transmit him with Directions to repair hither without delay.³⁸

The Situation of our Affairs in Canada, as reported by the Honorable Commissioners, is truly alarming, and I am sorry that my Opinion of the ill consequences resulting from the short Inlistment of the Army should be but too well confirmed by the experience they have had of the want of Discipline and Order in our Soldiery there this induces me again to wish Congress to determine on a liberal allowance to engage the Troops already in service to reinlist for a longer Period or during the continuance of the War; nor can I forbear expressing my Opinion of the Propriety of keeping the Military Chest always supplied

37. Dr. Jonathan Potts. He was deputy director general of the Northern Hospital, of which Dr. Samuel Stringer was director general.

38. On June 6 Congress took action on the recall of Wooster. The President wrote to Washington (June 7) describing the situation in Canada as reported by the commissioners, and Washington wrote to Wooster a 4-line note ordering him to repair to headquarters in New York City. Wooster requested an inquiry into his conduct, and a committee report absolved him of blame. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*, Aug. 17, 1776.) He resigned and was appointed major general of militia by the State of Connecticut. Washington's note to Wooster, dated June 9, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

with Money; as Evils of the most interesting Nature are often produced by want of a regular Payment of Troops,—the neglect makes them impatient and uneasy.

I am much surprized at the scarcity of Provisions there, particularly of Flour, as from several Accounts I had received from thence, I was led to expect that considerable supplies of that Article could be procured there. That our misfortunes may not become greater, I have wrote the Commissary to forward more Provisions in Addition to those already sent. An Adjutant and Quarter Master General are indispensibly necessary with Assistants, the Money saved the Continent by their non-appointment, will be but small and trifling, when put in competition with the Loss for want of them. Colonel Fleming³⁹ who acted in the former capacity under General Montgomery is now here, but his Indisposition is such, as to render him unfit at this Time for the Post. It is an important one, and requires Vigour and Activity to discharge the Duties of it; he will be of much service to Colonel Reed,⁴⁰ the Business of whose Office will be considerably increased by the Augmentation of the Army. it will be necessary too that the Commissary and Quarter Master General in Canada should have several Assistants and Clerks; nor do I think a precise Number can be fixed on; as a variety of circumstances may and must occur to render the Number essential for doing the Business in these Departments greater, or less, at different Times: it will be better I apprehend to leave it indefinite and with Power to the Commanding Officer to allow such as may be wanted. I am still in the Dark, how the unfortunate Affair ended at the Cedars, or on what Terms the Surrender was made, as the last letter from the Commissioners, has reference to a former, and mentions an

39. Col. Edward Fleming. He resigned June 15, 1776.

40. Col. Joseph Reed. He was Adjutant General of the Continental Army from June 5, 1776, to Jan. 22, 1777, when he resigned. Subsequently, he was offered a brigadier's commission, but declined; became President of Pennsylvania.

Agreement entered into which I have not seen; but I know of it more than I would wish.

I have received from Providence, in consequence of Mr. Morris's order as Chairman of the secret Committee of Congress, 234 Musketts in part of the 244 directed to be sent. the enclosed Copy of a Letter from Mr. Brown⁴¹ will account for the deficiency.

I shall be much Obliged by your ordering a Quantity of Lead and Flints to be immediately forwarded. our demands are and will be very pressing. There are also wanted some particular and necessary medicines, to complete our Hospital Chests, of which I will get Doctor Morgan to furnish the Congress with a List, when he writes or waits on them about some other matters necessary to be fixed in his Department.

As General Wooster in all Probability will be here in a little time, in Compliance with the Resolve of Congress and my order transmitted him, I wish to know what I am to do with him when he comes. General Schuyler in his Letter of the 31st. Ult., of which I transmitted you a Copy yesterday, mentions that sundry Persons had a design to seize him, as a Tory, and probably still have, and wishes Congress to give him some Public mark of their approbation, if they are convinced of his Zeal and Attachment to the Cause of his Country. Whether he intended, that I should communicate his Desire to them or not, I am not certain; but supposing that he did, I must beg leave to request that you lay the Paragraph before them, that they may do in the instance of his Requisition, whatever they may judge necessary. I have the Honour &ca.

41. Nicholas Brown's letter is dated May 27 from Providence, R. I. A copy by Caleb Gibbs is in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

P.S. If Congress have agreed to the Report of the Committee, for allowing the Indians 5 *pounds* for every Prisoner they shall take at Niagara &ca it is material I should be informed of it. this will be a proper Opportunity for them to embrace to gain Possession of Detroit and the other Posts whilst the Enemy are engaged toward Montreal &ca.⁴²

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 9, 1776.

Dear Sir: I am now to acknowledge the Receipt of your several Favors of the 21st, 24th, 26th, and 26th, 27th, 28th and 31st Ult. with the several Papers inclosed. The whole of them except the last I communicated to Congress when at Philadelphia; That I did not get 'till my Return; but have since transmitted them a Copy of it, and of the Papers respecting Sir J. Johnson.

In Regard to a further Remittance to Canada the Commissioners have wrote Congress fully on the Subject, and I presume they will forward such a Supply of Money immediately as they think necessary.

As there is but too much Probability that Sir I. Johnson may attempt to ravage the Frontier Counties, and to excite the disaffected to take Arms against us, I think it will be adviseable that Colo. Dayton should remain as you request, as long as you apprehend a Necessity for it.

It is not in my Power to spare any more Men from hence, either for the Communication, or to assist in repairing Ticonderoga. The Detachments already gone to Canada have weakened the Force necessary for the Defence of this Place, considering its Importance,

42. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

In Provincial Congress, New York, June 8, 1776.

Resolved, That the thanks of the Congress be presented to his Excellency, General Washington, for the important services he has rendered to the United Colonies, and for the attention he has paid to the interest and civil authority of this colony; and that he be assured of the readiness of this Congress, to afford him all the aid in their power to enable him to execute the important trust reposed in him.

Ordered, That the President wait upon General Washington and communicate the said resolution to him.

June 9.

The President informed the Congress that, pursuant to the order of yesterday he waited upon his Excellency, General Washington, and communicated to him the resolve therein mentioned; that his Excellency was pleased to return the following answer, and requested the President to communicate the same to Congress:

“Gentlemen: I am extremely obliged for the high sense you entertain of my services, and for your promises of every possible assistance in the discharge of my important duty. You may rest assured, that my attention to the happiness of this Colony shall not be wanting, nor my regard to the civil authority remitted, while I am honored with the command I now hold.”

—Force's *American Archives*, Fourth series, vol. 6, 1386.

more perhaps than Policy will justify. Be that as it may, the Reinforcement which Congress have resolved to send to Canada, for keeping open the Communication between that Country and it's Colonies, as you will see by the Copy inclosed in my Letter of the 7th, would supersede the Necessity of Men going from this Camp, provided they could be spared. I should suppose, that Van Schaick's and Wynkoop's Regiments, exclusive of any other Men would nearly suffice for the Purposes mentioned in your several Letters; or that very few Men more, in Addition to them certainly would, if they were compleat, and properly employed; but I am informed by a Letter from General Sullivan of

the 18th. Ulto., dated at Albany, that these Regiments were not to be found on the strictest Inquiry he could make; that Colo. Van Schaick⁴³, who was there, never furnished a single Man for Guard, or any other Duty, after he got there, and that Lieut. Colo. Courtland⁴⁴ of Wynkoop's Regt., when he applied for Pay for two Companies said to be in Tryon County, to keep the Tories in Order, informed him they had neither Arms nor Ammunition; that in some Companies there was not a Man present fit for Duty; and that in others there was not more than eleven and in some less. He also complains of the great Waste of Pork, by the Waggoners drawing out the Brine to lighten the Carriage, and in his Letter two Days before, charges the Batteaux Men, and the Waggon Master with Indolence and a Strange Neglect of Duty.

I well know, my dear Sir, that the Multiplicity of Matters you are engaged in, will necessarily put in the Power of those who are not

43. Col. Gooze (or Gozen) Van Schaick, of the Second New York Regiment, and, later, of the First New York Regiment.

44. Lieut. Col. Philip Van Cortlandt, of the Fourth New York Regiment. Later he was colonel of the Second New York Regiment.

influenced by Principles of Honesty and Justice, to practise many Impositions; but I must beg you will turn your Attention as much as possible to these Things, and reform such Abuses as have already happened, or prevent them in future.

I am very doubtful, whether the Flour you seem to think may be had in Canada can be got. The Commissioners Letters as late as the 28th. Ulto. seem to preclude every such Hope.

I esteem it a Matter of Importance, not only to fortify, and secure Ticonderoga; but every other Post on the communication: and that you should garrison them with Men under judicious and spirited Officers, to be fixed there, who might be called to Account for Misconduct, which is difficult to do, where they are shifting and changing continually, and who would esteem it their indispensable Duty to carry on and maintain the Works against any Surprizes or Attacks that may be attempted.

I have wrote to Congress to appoint Engineers, if they can fix upon proper Persons for the Office. If you know of any, you had better employ them. I am confident Congress will allow them the usual Pay.

When I came from Philadelphia I left the Indians there and doubt not but Congress will use their Endeavours to prevent them returning for some Time. I have shewed them what you said upon the Subject.

I have spoken to the Qr. Master, about a proper Person to superintend the Building of Gondolas but he knows of none. There is a Man who came to direct the Building of some here; and if any of the Carpenters shall be deemed qualified after seeing the Model, I will send you one.

I have wrote to Philadelphia for a Supply of Flints, which shall be forwarded you as soon as possible, and will give Direction that you be furnished with a Quantity of necessary Medicines.

With Respect to St. Luke Lecorne, Major Campbell and the other Prisoners at Esopus, I think it will be prudent for you to remove them, or such of them as you apprehend dangerous, to some other secure Place, and they should be under a suitable and trusty Guard.

Your continuing to build Batteaux appears a necessary Measure; as a sufficient Number should be had to transport our Troops going to Canada or coming from thence; if they should ever be under the disagreeable Necessity of evacuating the Possession they now have to the Enemy; an Event, I sincerely wish not to happen; but which from the melancholy Complexion of Things in that Quarter, I conceive possible.

I have been much surprised at not receiving more perfect and explicit Account of the Defeat of Colo. Bedel and his Party at the Cedars. I should have thought some of the Officers in Command there would and ought to have transmitted it immediately; but as they have not, it is probable I should have long remained in Doubt as to the Event, had not

the Commissioners called on me to Day. Nor should I consider my not having a Return of the Army, Stores, &c. in Canada, a Matter of less Wonder had I not been accustomed to the Neglect. If it is not become too inveterate, I wish it could be got the better of. It is certainly of much Importance, and necessary to be known frequently.

Since mine of the 21st. and yours of the 31st. Ulto. Captains Swan⁴⁵ and Dundee⁴⁶ with three Privates have been here, having a Permit to go to Philadelphia. They came down the North River from Albany (I believe) to this Place, where I make no Doubt they reconnoitre all our Works, and in their Passage, those at the Highlands. This Indulgence, I conceive of such infinite Prejudice to our Cause, for the Reasons I have assigned and many more that may be added, that I hope, it will never be granted again.

I wish you to notify the several Committees in the Neighbourhood of Albany, having the Care of Prisoners, of the injurious Consequences which must necessarily result from such a License, to prevent their allowing it to any on future Applications.

As Congress have resolved on a large Augmentation to the Army in Canada, as you will see by the Copy of their Vote transmitted in my last; it seems material that you should advise with the Commissary in that Department, and Mr. Trumbull here and concert a Plan for their Subsistence. if they cannot be supplied plentifully with Provisions, their going will be of more injury than Benefit, and encrease the Distress of the whole.

In your Favor of the 20th. you are desirous that a Court of Inquiry should be ordered respecting the Charge contained in the Informations I inclosed you in mine of the 21st.; If you conceive it necessary, I will do it with Pleasure, if you will point out the Mode to be pursued, to me. The Matters objected to [by] you, appear so uncertain, vague,

45. Capt. Rowland Swan, of the Twenty-sixth Foot, British Army.

46. Capt. Peter Dundee, of the Seventh Foot, British Army.

and incredible, that there is nothing to found the Proceedings on, were there the most distant Necessity for the Scrutiny. By Reason of a Paragraph in your Letter of the 31st., I mentioned the Matter to Congress, to whom I had the Honor of writing this Day, and when at Philadelphia communicated it to some of them, on their reading your first Letter, in which Mention was made of the Subject. In doing this and giving you the Information I had received, I consider myself as having only discharged the Duties of Justice and of Friendship.

I am sorry for the Attack you have had of the Ague and wishing you a perfect Recovery. I am, etc.

***To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS**

New York, June 10, 1776.

Sir: Since I did myself the honor of Writing to you Yesterday, I have had the satisfaction of seeing, (and for a few Minutes conversing) with Mr. Chase and Mr. Carroll from Canada; their Acct. of our Troops, and the situation of our Affairs in that department cannot possibly surprize you more than it has done me; but I need not touch upon a Subject which you will be so well informd of from the fountain head; nor shou'd I have given you the trouble of a Letter by this days Post but

for the distraction which seems to prevail in the Commissary's department (as well as others in that Quarter) the Necessity of having it under one general direction; and the dissatisfaction of Col. Trumbull at the allowance made him by Congress (as an equivalent for his trouble). With respect to this particular matter, I can only say that I think he is a Man well cut out for the business; and that where a Shilling is saved in the Pay, a pound may be lost by Mismanagement in the Office; and that his resignation at this time (I mean this Campaign) may possibly, be attended with fatal Consequences; I therefore humbly submit to Congress the propriety of handsomely rewarding those Gentlemen who hold such very important, troublesome, and hazardous Offices, as Commissary and Quarter Master.⁴⁷

In speaking to the former about the Supplies necessary for the Troops to be raiz'd; he informd me that the quantity of Salt Provisions, which was Shipping from hence might render his attempts to do it, precarious; in consequence of which I desired him to lay the matter before the Convention of this Colony, which he will do this day; but in the mean while desired Congress might be informd of the matter which I cannot better do than in his own Words, Inclosed,

47. A copy of Trumbull's letter to Congress on the subject of his pay and suggesting a commission on his purchases is in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*. Instead of the commission, Congress raised his pay to \$150 a month. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*. June 17, 1776.)

and submit the consideration of it to the Wisdom of that honourable body.

To Congress I also submit the Propriety of keeping the two Continental Battalions (under the Cored. of Colonels Shae⁴⁸ and McGaw⁴⁹) at Philadelphia, when there is the greatest probability of a speedy attack upon this place from the Kings Troops; the Incouragements given by Gov. Tryon to the disaffected, which are circulated, no one can well tell how; the Movements of these kind of People which are more easy to perceive than describe; the confident report which is said to have come immediatly from Govr. Tryon, and brought by a Frigate from Hallifax that the Troops at that place were Imbarking for this, added to a thousand Incidental Circumstances, trivial in themselves, but strong from comparison, leaves not a doubt upon my Mind but that Troops are hourly expected at the Hook.

I had no doubt when I left this City, for Philadelphia, but that some measures would have been taken to secure the suspected, and dangerous Persons of this Government before now, and left Orders for the Military to give every aid to the Civil Power: But, the Subject is delicate, and nothing is done in it: we may therefore have Internal, as well as external Enemies to contend with. I have the honor, etc.

48. Col. John Shee, of the Third Pennsylvania Regiment.

49. Col. Robert Magaw, of the Fifth Pennsylvania Regiment.

To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

New York, June 10, 1776.

Sir: Before this, I expect you have received the Resolve of Congress for augmenting our Army here, and in Canada, with their requisition for the Quota of Men to be furnished by your Colony; I must beg leave to add, that, from intelligence I have just received, and a Variety of Circumstances combining to Confirm it, Genl. Howe, with the Fleet from Halifax, or some other Armament, is hourly expected at the Hook, with designs, doubtless, to make an Impression here, and possess themselves of this Colony, of the last Importance to us, in the present controversy. Our Works are extensive and many, and the Troops here but few for their defence; being greatly reduced by the Regiments detached on the Canada Expedition. In this critical conjuncture of Affairs, the Experience I have had, of your Zeal and readiness to assist the Common cause, induces me to request the most speedy and early Succour, that can be obtained from your Colony, and that the Militia be forwarded one Battalion after another, as fast as they can possibly be raised; without waiting to make up the whole complement to be furnished for this Place, before any of them March. I would advise, that they come properly provided with Field and other officers, and that the person appointed by the Colony to Command the whole, be here a day or two before them, to receive his Orders, and be in readiness to take the Command on their Arrival. It will be proper too, that Notice be sent a day or two before their Coming, that provision may be made for furnishing and disposing of them in proper places.

I have wrote a Similar Letter to the Jersey Convention, praying Aid from them. I am, &c.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 13,⁶³ 1776.

Dear Sir: I last Night received by Mr. Bennet, your Favor of the 8th. Inst., addressed to General Putnam, or the Officer commanding here, covering one for Congress, with a Copy of Colo. Kirkland's to you, both of which I shall immediately forward to Philadelphia.

In Consequence of your former Letters, the Commissary has been directed to continue Supplies of Provisions. I shall repeat the Direction, and doubt not of his Exertions in this Instance. If it's Arrival at

Albany ceased for a Time, it might be owing to the Accounts received, that a good Deal, particularly Flour, might be had in Canada. I will speak to him about the Expenditure of Pork here, and request that no more be used than he may find necessary, that there may be a larger Quantity for the Canada Department.

I will also speak to the Qr. Mr. Genl. to provide and forward all the Clothing he can get, as soon as possible.

As to intrenching Tools, they are extremely scarce, and what we have, far too few for the Works carrying, and proper to be carried on for the Defence of this Place. However I will try to furnish you with a few more, and wish

63. Ford prints this letter under date of June 17.

your Endeavours to purchase what you can from the Country People. Many of them perhaps will part with a Spade or Pick Ax, and some with both, and though many may not be collected in that Way; what are, will be of great Service.

If the Accounts of Colo. Bedel's and Major Butterfield's Conduct be true, they have certainly acted a Part deserving the most exemplary Notice. I hope you will take proper Measures and have good Courts appointed to bring them, and every other Officer that has been or shall be guilty of Mal-Conduct, to Trial, that they may be punished according to their Offences. Our Misfortunes at the Cedars were occasioned, as it is said, intirely by their base and cowardly Behaviour, and cannot be ascribed to any other Cause.

In my Letter of the 7th. which will have reached you ere this, I inclosed a Resolve of Congress for engaging the Indians, not more than two Thousand, in our Service. This will indicate to you, their Opinion, and knowing their Sentiments fully upon this Head, I cannot but advise, that you forthwith hold a Conference with the six Nations, and any others, you with your Brother Commissioner, may think necessary; and form with them an Alliance on such Terms and Conditions, as shall seem most likely to secure their Interest and Friendship, without waiting the further Directions of Congress. The Situation of our Affairs will not suffer the Delay, and I am persuaded your Conduct, and the Speech you intend to deliver the Sachems, will meet their Approbation and Thanks. I think that Part of it

which mentions the Time and Place of our taking Post, might be omitted; but this I leave to you. I shall inform Congress of what I have wrote you on this Subject, and of the verbal Intelligence you sent me by Bennet from Albany, when you overtook him, respecting the Indians coming down the Mohawk River under Sir John Johnson, and of your preparing to resist them. I sincerely wish

you Success and that their first Incursions and Attempts against us may be attended with their intire Defeat. It will be necessary to employ Colonel Dayton and his Regiment in this Service and in securing a Post where Fort Stanwix formerly stood, which I esteem of much Importance; But I submit it to you, who are much better acquainted with that Country than I am; whether, previous to that, it will not be necessary and essential that a Post be established lower down, somewhere about the Falls below the German Flatts, to secure our Communication with that Garrison. Should this not be done, will it not be in the Power of the Savages to come between that and our Frontiers and intercept all Supplies of Men and Provisions going thither.

I observe you esteem the Ground opposite to Ticonderoga to be more advantageous for a Post against the Enemy. Messrs. Chase and Carroll had told me the same. I should think, therefore, that the Place most capable of Defence, and having the greatest Advantages, should be improved and

necessary Works thrown up, with the utmost Dispatch. But will not both be best? Cannot Ticonderoga be kept and this improved and maintained at the same Time? I must submit this to you, and refer you to my Letter of the 9th. upon the Subject of fortifying all the Posts, and about the Engineers. If you know of any Persons who can be of Service in that Way, do employ them. I know of none myself or have I one that I can possibly spare.

I have been applied to by Colo. Nicholson, (who says he was appointed by Congress to the Command of a Regiment to be raised out of two Battalions of York Troops that were in Canada last Year), for Instructions for that Purpose. As this concerns the Department more immediately under your Directions, and with which you must be much better acquainted than I am, I did not think it right to give him any Direction about it, but if the Fact is so, desire that you will give him such Orders, that the Views of Congress may be carried into Execution, as you judge necessary.

In like Manner, I have had several Applications from Officers coming from the Canada Department, for Pay that became due there, which I did not conceive myself at Liberty to comply with; being ignorant of their Appointments or Services, and as they will perhaps apply to you for Certificates to lay before me, I wish you to be very explicit, as to the Time of their being in Office and from which their Pay is due. I am, etc.

To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE

Head Quarters, New York, June 13, 1776.

Sirs: I am informed that a Number of persons on Long Island (by character not the most friendly to the cause of the United Colonies) have in their hands considerable Quantities of Pork and other provisions; which they refuse to part with for Continental Bills they may have other reasons for their Conduct, still more detrimental and therefore I must beg the Interposition of your Congress in this Matter, so as to prevent the evils which are much to be apprehended. The Commissary General will purchase all their Provisions, at good prices and give them Continental Bills in pay; Gold and Silver he has none. The provisions are wanted for the Army, and those who are wellwishers to the Cause, and live in exposed Situations, will undoubtedly be glad to dispose of them; the disadvantages which may result to the Public, by leaving them in the Hands of Men of a different complexion, are too obvious to need animadversion.⁶⁴

I have your report respecting the obstruction of the navigation of the Hudson's River under Consideration, and am pursuing measures to carry it into Execution, with all possible Dispatch. With great Respect, I am &c.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

Head Quarters, June 13, 1776.

Sir: I have the Honor of transmitting to Congress, a Letter which came by Express last Night from General Schuyler inclosing the Copy of a Letter to him from Colonel Kirkland.⁵⁷ I have likewise inclosed the Copy of one directed to General Putnam or the Commanding Officer at New York.

The Representation contained in these Letters have induced me, without waiting the determination of Congress, to direct General Schuyler, immediately to commence a Treaty with the Six Nations, and to engage them in our Interest, upon the best Terms

64. The legislature answered (June 15) that it depended on the Commissary General to obtain the provisions desired and that it had "in contemplation some general and effectual measures for securing the live stock in certain parts of the Colony for the benefit of the Army." Its letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

57. Lieut. Col. Peter Kirkland, of the New York Militia.

he and his Colleagues in commission can procure, and, I trust the Urgency of the Occasion will justify my Proceedings to the Congress. The necessity for decision and dispatch in all our Measures, in my Opinion, becomes every day more and more apparent.

The Express Mr. Bennet,⁵⁸ was overtaken at Albany by General Schuyler, who had received Intelligence at Fort George, that a considerable Body of Indians were coming Down the Mohawk River under the conduct of Sir John Johnson, the General's extreme hurry would not allow him to write; but it seems his Intention is to collect at Albany a sufficient Force to oppose Sir John. I have given him my Opinion, that Col. Dayton's Regiment⁵⁹ should be employed in that service and to secure the Post, where Fort Stanwix formerly stood.

In consequence of an Information that several Merchants were exporting salted Beef and Pork from this place, I requested the Commissary General to make Application to the Provincial Congress for a restraint to be laid on the Exportation of these Articles, as I apprehended not only that the Enemy might receive supplies by the Capture of our Vessels, but that our People might shortly experience a scarcity; The Provincial Congress have accordingly made a Resolution, (a copy of which is inclosed) to stop Exportation for fourteen Days; they expect Congress will, in the meantime,

58. Elijah Bennett, a trusted express rider of Congress.

59. Col. Elias Dayton's Third New Jersey regiment.

frame some general Regulations on this Head; they are unwilling they say to subject their constituents to partial Restraint.

I once mentioned to Congress, that I thought a War Office extremely necessary, and they seemed inclined to institute one for our Army, but the Affair seems to have been since dropt; give me leave again to insist on the Utility and Importance of such an Establishment; the more I reflect upon the Subject, the more I am convinced of its necessity, and that Affairs can never properly be conducted without it.⁶⁰

T'is with Pleasure I receive the Resolve inclosed, in your favor of the 11th. instant; one considerable Ground of Dissatisfaction in the Army is thereby removed.

I have employed Persons in Building the Gondolas and Rafts, which the Congress thought necessary for the defence of this Place, and in conjunction with the Provincial Congress, have determined to sink Cheveaux de Frizes one of which is already begun. I am, etc.⁶¹

60. "The establishing a War Office is a new and great event in the History of America, and will doubtless be attended with essential Advantages when properly conducted and inspected. I hope the Committee will be ready, in a few days to enter upon the Execution of their Duty."— *Hancock to Washington*, June 14, 1776. Hancock's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

The membership of the Board of War was, at first, John Adams, Roger Sherman, Benjamin Harrison, James Wilson, and Edward Rutledge. Richard Peters, of Pennsylvania, was appointed secretary of the board. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*, June 12 and 13, 1776.)

61. In the writing of Alexander Contee Hanson.

To SAMUEL CHASE

Head Quarters, New York, June 13, 1776.

Sir: I am to inform you that Colonel Nicholson,⁶² of whose Character and Conduct you have received an unfavorable Impression, is in Town; he comes for the purpose of raising Recruits for a New York Battalion, to the Command of which he has been nominated. When I intimated to him, that from certain representations I had received, I judged him very unfit for the Employment, he insisted upon a Court of Enquiry to manifest his Innocence, and clear his reputation. Now Sir, as I am not well apprized of any particular charge to be exhibited against him, I must request you to acquaint me with what you know of the matter, and what persons it will be proper to call in as Witnesses; he may otherwise be acquitted by the Court (when there are just Grounds of Accusation) merely for want of Testimony. I am, etc.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN SULLIVAN

New York, June 13, 1776.

Dear Sir: Having received Intelligence of the unfortunate Death of General Thomas, occasioned by the small Pox he had taken, the Command of the Army in Canada devolves on you. I am therefore, to request your most strenuous Exertions to retrieve our Circumstances in that Quarter,

62. Col. John Nicholson. He was colonel of a New York regiment and, according to Heitman, colonel of a Continental regiment from March to November, 1776. His petition, dated June 12, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

from the melancholy Situation they are now in, and for performing the arduous Task of bringing Order out of Confusion. I confess there is more Room for Enterprize and Activity than I could wish; but then you will remember that you and your Colleagues will be entitled to the grateful Thanks of your Country, in Proportion to the Services you render.

Being extremely hurried in sending Dispatches to Congress and General Schuyler, I have not Time to write you so fully, as I could wish and therefore shall only add my Request, that you from Time to Time make me regular Returns of the Strength of the Army, military Stores, and any material Occurrence, and wishing you and your Brothers, under the Direction of a gracious Providence, to lead your Army to Conquest and Victory. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF THE CONGRESS

New York, June 14, 1776.

Sir: I herewith transmit you copies of a Letter from General Schuyler and of its several Inclosures, which I received since I had the honor of addressing you Yesterday. From these you will learn General Thomas died the 2d. Instant and the Apprehensions of our Frontier friends in this Colony, that our Savage Foes are meditating an Attack against them.

I must beg leave to refer you to a paragraph in the copy of General Schuyler's letter to General Putnam or the commanding officer here, inclosed

in mine of the 13th. Instr. where he requests a supply of Clothing to be sent for the Army in Canada. As there is but little or no probability of getting it here, I shall be glad to know whether there will be any chance of procuring it in Philadelphia, and if it should be sent thro' the hands of the Quarter Master here, to what account it is to be charged.

I was last evening favored with yours of the 11th. inst., and hope the two Battalions which Congress have ordered from Philadelphia to the defence of this place, will come provided with Arms: If they do not, they will be of no service, as there are more Troops here already than are Armed.

From General Schuyler's Letter, he has in View the taking post where Fort Stanwix formerly stood. I wrote him I thought it prudent, previous to that, to secure a post lower down about the Falls below the German Flats least the Savages should possess themselves of the Country thereabouts, and prevent such supplies of Men and Money as may be necessary to send there in future.—The says he is in want of Cannon and Ammunition, but has expressed himself so ambiguously, that I am at a loss to know, whether he meant what he has said as an Application or not, this being the only Intelligence on the Subject, and the first mention of his wants. I have desired him to explain the matter, and in his future requisitions for necessaries, to be more certain and explicit. In the mean time I shall send some Intrenching Tools, and enquire whether any Cannon can be spared from hence. I am &ca.⁶⁶

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 14, 1776.

Dear Sir: I was favoured with yours of the 10th. Inst.⁶⁷ with its Inclosures by last Night's Post. The Stroke meditating by the Indians against our Frontier Inhabitants, is what I have long thought would happen, as they were not engaged in our Interest. But I am in full Hopes you will be able to repel their hostile Designs, and convince them of their

66. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

67. Schuyler's letter, dated June 10, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

Imprudence in joining our Enemies, without the least Cause of Quarrel.

As to intrenching Tools, I shall direct the Qt. Master to send up some, as early as possible; but in Respect to what you say about Cannon and Ammunition, I am at a Loss whether it is intended as an Application or not. I do not know, that any of the former have been requested, but for the armed Vessels in the Lakes; or of the latter, but what has been sent for the Canada Expedition. I wish you to explain the Matter, and that your Requisitions for Necessaries may be always certain and explicit, as to Quantity and Quality.

As the Militia to reinforce the Army in Canada, and for keeping open our Communication with that Province or a Part of them, will probably be on their March before long. I think it will be advisable for you to write the different Governors furnishing them, of the Routs they should take, and of the Places proper for, their Rendezvous.

I wrote you Yesterday and on the 9th. Inst. to which I refer you for full Answer to all yours between the 21st. Ulto. and your last. I am, &c.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 16, 1776.

Dear Sir: I received your several Favours of the 11th. continued to the 12th. and 12th. with a Copy of General Arnold's Letter.

The Return delivered you by General Wooster you have forgot to inclose.

The Account of Mr. Dean,⁷⁵ is variant from Colo. Kirklands; but yet they seem both to agree in the most material Points; vizt. That some Parts of our Frontiers are to feel the Effects of the Savage Resentment, which the Friends of Government have been industriously trying to call forth against us. You have done well in your Message to the six Nations. The sooner a Conference can be held the better, and I think the most vigorous Exertions necessary to secure a Post, as you mention where Fort Stanwix formerly stood, and below that as I intimated in my last. If you can effect these, I am hopeful all their Attempts in that Quarter will be unavailing.

I have ordered a Ton of Powder, half a Ton of Lead, five Thousand Flints, some Cannon, intrenching Tools, and a Dozen whip Saws and Files, to be immediately sent you; which you will receive in two or three Days, with a List of them and every other Article sent from hence at this Time.

I have inclosed you a Copy of an Invoice of Goods now in the Hands of Mr. Robert Henry, which he offered the Qr. Mr. Genl. this Week, on moderate Terms as the Qr. Master informs me. It will certainly be proper, that you purchase them or such of them as will suit the Army in Canada; and it will be less troublesome and expensive,

75. James Dean, or Deane, agent and interpreter for Indian affairs in the Northern Department.

than sending Articles from hence, supposing they can be procured. I wish you to get every Thing you want, and that can be had, either in Albany, or it's Vicinity, rather than to send here for them, for I am really so immersed in Business, and have such a Variety of Things to attend to, that I scarcely know which Way to turn myself. Perhaps if you make strict Inquiry you may obtain not only more Goods but other Necessaries.

The Indians are here, just returned from Philadelphia. I will communicate to them your Wishes for their Return, and give Direction, that every Mark of Respect be shown them by those who go with Them.

I have requested the Pay-Master to procure, if possible, as much hard Money as will discharge Mr. Black's Claim. How he will succeed, I cannot tell. If he can get it, it shall be forwarded, as soon as a proper Conveyance can be had.

In Regard to a Person to superintend the Building of Gondolas, and other Carpenters to carry on the Work, I refer you to my Letter of the 9th. and shall only add, that they cannot be now had, every one qualified for the Business, being employed here.

The Intelligence contained in General Sullivan's Letter is extremely pleasing, and I sincerely wish his most sanguine Hopes may be more than

answered. If the Affection of the Canadians can be engaged, and he seems to have no Doubt of it, it will be of much Importance, and probably the Means of our retrieving our Misfortunes in that Quarter.⁷⁶

I find by General Arnolds Letter to General Sullivan; Colo. Bedel, Major Butterfield; and Captn. Young⁷⁷ are gone to the Sorrel for Trial. If their Conduct was as base and infamous as represented, it will surely meet with an exemplary Punishment. Men who will not discharge the Duty they owe their Country from Principle, must be influenced to it by other Motives; or at least, be prevented from betraying our most valuable Rights by a cowardly and disgraceful Behaviour.

Inclosed you have an Extract of a Letter I received by last Night's Post from General Ward, from which we may reasonably conjecture, that the Rest of the Transports which sailed with the one taken, will not be long before they arrive. It seems evident they expected to find General Howe at Boston, and I am hopeful some others, under this Idea, will fall into our Hands.

There are also Accounts in Town of two or three valuable Prizes more, being taken to the Eastward, one with several light Cannon, another a West Indiaman homeward bound with a Quantity of Dollars and Sugars. But, I fear, tho' the Accounts seem particular, that they want Confirmation, as General Ward mentions nothing of them. I am, etc.

P.S. The Whip Saws, I fear, can't be got. The Qr. Master says he has tried without Success.

76. Considering the actual state of affairs in Canada, General Sullivan's letter was extraordinary. He described the situation in a most favorable light; yet 12 days afterwards the whole American army was driven out of the Province, which all the officers on the spot, except General Sullivan, had foreseen and predicted. This letter, dated June 5–6, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*. It is printed in Sparks's *Letters to Washington*, vol. 1, p. 211.

77. Capt. Samuel(?) Young, of Bedel's Rangers.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL JOHN SULLIVAN

New York, June 16, 1776.

Dear Sir: I was favoured with yours of the 5th. and 6th. Inst. by Express Yesterday Evening from General Schuyler; and am exceedingly happy on Account of the agreeable and interesting Intelligence it contains. Before it came to Hand, I almost dreaded to hear from Canada, as my Advices seemed to promise nothing favourable, but rather our farther Misfortunes. But I am now hopeful, our Affairs, from the confused, distracted and almost forlorn State, in which you found them, will emerge and assume an Aspect of Order and Success. I am convinced many of our Misfortunes are to be attributed to a Want of Discipline, and a proper Regard to the Conduct of the Soldiery. Hence it was, and from our feeble Effects to protect the Canadians, that they had almost joined, and taken Part against us. As you are fully apprised of this and conceive them well disposed towards us, with Confidence I trust, you will take every Step in your Power to conciliate and secure their Friendship. If this can be effected, and of which you seem to have no Doubt, I see no Objection to our indulging a Hope that this Country, of such Importance in the present Controversy, may yet be added to and compleat our Union. I confess, this interesting Work is now more

difficult than it would have been heretofore had Matters been properly conducted; but yet, I flatter myself it may be accomplished by a wise, prudent and animated Behaviour in the Officers and Men engaged in it; especially if assisted by the friendly Disposition of the Inhabitants. I think every Mark

of Friendship and Favour should be shewn them, to encourage their Zeal and Attachment to our Cause, and from which, if they once heartily embark, we shall derive innumerable Benefits.

Your Conduct in pushing and securing Posts low down the Country, is certainly judicious, and of the utmost Advantage. The farther down we can take and maintain Posts, the greater will our Possession of the Country be; observing at the same Time the Necessity of having a safe Retreat left, if you should be obliged to abandon them by a superior Force. I am hopeful and shall anxiously wait to hear of General Thompson's making a successful Attack upon the Party intrenching at the three Rivers. Their Defeat will be of the most essential Service. It will chagrin them and disconcert their Schemes on the one Hand, and animate our Men and give Life to our Canadian Friends on the other, and efface from their Minds the unfavorable Impressions our late Conduct has made.

It will be of material Consequence, in your Advances down the Country, to secure the several important Posts as you go; at which you may, in Case you should be obliged to decline the main Object you have in View, make a vigorous

and successful Stand, in your Retreat. I concur with you in Opinion in thinking it not of material Moment to keep a very large Number of Men at Lachine or the upper Posts. There should be no more than will be necessary to repel such Attacks and Attempts as may be made by the Savages, and the Regular Troops above you, allowing for such a Number of disaffected Canadians as may join them. But then there should be a sufficient Number for that Purpose, as our further Misfortunes there, might be of the most injurious Consequences. If they can be maintained, the disaffected above will dwindle away and the Insurrection promise nothing disastrous.

It is impossible for me at this Distance, and not acquainted with the Situation of Affairs as well as you, who are on the Spot, to give any particular Directions for your Conduct and Operations. I, therefore, have only to request that you with your Officers will in every Instance, pursue such Measures as the Exigency of our Affairs may seem to require, and as to you shall appear most likely to advance and promote the Interest and Happiness of your Country.

The Return which you mention to have inclosed, was not in your Letter. You probably thro' Hurry forgot to put it in, or General Schuyler

may have omitted it, when in his Hands. I wrote you on the 13th. on this Subject, and must again enjoin a particular Attention to this Part of your Duty, it being of the utmost Importance to be frequently certified of our whole Strength and Stores.

In Compliance with your Request, I shall transmit a Copy of your Letter to Congress, by To-Morrow's Post. It will give them sensible Pleasure, and such as they had no good Reason to expect, at least so soon.

I have inclosed you an Extract of a Letter from General Ward. From the Capture mentioned in it, there is Reason to expect the other Transports that sailed with her are not far off the Coast.

In Regard to your giving Commissions, it is a Measure that I can neither approve or disapprove, having no Authority to act in this Instance myself. The Propriety of it, must depend upon the Powers and Practice of your Predecessors in Command. If they had none, it will be judged of, most probably, by the good or bad Consequences it may produce. Congress from your Letter will see you have exercised such a Power, and when they write you, will either confirm or refuse it, in all Probability.

Least you should conceive that I do not think Lachine, or the Cedars, Posts of Importance and whose Defence are not very material; I must here add, that I esteem them of much Consequence,

but only mean that more Men need not be employed than what will be equal to any probable Attack, that may be made against them.

I would observe, before I have done, that it is my most earnest Request, that Harmony, a good Understanding, and a free Communication of Sentiments, may prevail and be preserved between the General and Field Officers, particularly the former. Nothing can produce greater Benefits than this, nor tend more to promote your military Operations. Whereas History and Observation, do sufficiently evince (they abound with numberless Examples) the fatal Consequences, which have ever resulted, from Distrust, Jealousy, and Disagreement among Officers of these Ranks.

Wishing, therefore, your Counsels and Efforts to be founded in a happy Union, and to meet the Smiles of a kind Providence. I am, etc.

P.S. Knowing your great Zeal for the Cause of your Country, and desire to render her every possible Service, I must caution you not to put too much to the Hazard in your Exertions to establish her Rights, and to receive with a proper Degree of Caution, the Professions the Canadians may make. They have

the Character of an ingenuous, artful People, and very capable of Finesse and Cunning. Therefore my Advice is, that you put not too much in their Power; but seem to trust them, rather than do it too far. I would also have you to keep all your Posts as you go well secured, to guard against any treacherous Conduct.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, June 16, 1776.

Sir: I am now to acknowledge the Receipt of your Favors of the 27th. Ulto. and of the 3rd. and 6th. Inst., and in Answer to the First, think you was right in your Direction to Mr. Bartlett, about the Brigantine Hannah, as Mr. Morris had wrote for one.

The two Schooners, considering their Force and Number of Men, certainly behaved extremely well in repelling the Attack, made by such a Number of Boats, and it is only to be lamented that the Affair was attended with the Death of Captain Mugford. He seemed to deserve a better Fate.⁷²

The Determination of the Court of Inquiry upon Colonel Varnum's Complaint, transmitted in that of the 3rd., is very different from what he expected, or I imagined it would be, from his State of the Case. Whether it is right or wrong, it is not in my Power to determine, as the Evidence which was before them is not inserted in the Proceedings, which ought to have been, as I at this Distance can have no other Means to warrant me, either in confirming,

72. Capt. Thomas Mugford, of the armed schooner *Franklin*.

"The intrepid Captain Mugford fell a little before the Enemy left his Schooner, he was ran through with a lance while he was cutting off the hands of the Pirates as they were attempting to board him; and it is said that with his own hands he cut off five pair of theirs; no other Man was either killed or wounded on board the *Franklin*."— *Artemas Ward to Washington*, May 20, 1776. This letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

or rejecting the Sentence. I cannot but add that it seems extraordinary to me and exceedingly strange, that Captain Lane⁷³ should have been at so much Trouble and Expence to get the Men, without having a Right to them. For which Reason, to discountenance a Practice extremely pernicious in its Nature, of one Officer's trying to take away, and seduce the Men of another, and on Account of the Imperfection in the Proceedings, in not stating the Matter fully and the whole Evidence. The Complaint should be reheard, and every thing appertaining to it, the Manner of Inlistment &c. particularly specified for me to found my Judgment on.

The Arms &c. which you sent to Norwich as mentioned in the Invoice, contained in that of the 6th., are not arrived. The Number of Carbines is only half of what General Putnam wrote for, as I

have been informed, and it is less by three Hundred, than I directed to be sent in my Letter from Philadelphia, of the 28th. Ulto. This, I suppose had not come to Hand, when you wrote, as you have not acknowledged the Receipt of it.

I have inclosed two Letters for Major Small and Charles Proctor Esqr. supposed to be at Hallifax; which being wrote with a Design to procure the Inlargement of Captn. Proctor, a Prisoner on Board the Mercury Man of War, or induce them to intercede for a more humane Treatment to be shewn him, I request you to forward by the first Opportunity, by Way of Nova Scotia.

73. Capt. John Lane, of the Ninth Continental Infantry. On June 26 a court of inquiry sat on his complaint against Lieut. Daniel Merrill, of the Eighteenth Continental Infantry, charged with improperly enlisting men. A court of inquiry had already been held on Merrill (May 24) on a similar complaint from Varnum. The proceedings of both courts are in the *Washington Papers*, but Col. James Mitchell Varnum's petition has not been found.

I am this Moment favoured with yours of the 9th. Inst., advising me of the Capture made by the armed Vessels, of one of the Transports with a Company of Highlanders on Board, and I flatter myself if our Vessels keep a good Lookout, as the whole Fleet are bound to Boston which sailed with her, that more of them will fall into our Hands. This is a further Proof, that Government expected General Howe was still in Boston.

I am extremely sorry that your Health is more and more impaired, and having heard by a Letter from Colo. Hancock, that Mr. Whitcombe, Colo. Whitcomb's Brother, is appointed a Brigr. General,⁷⁴ I shall order him to relieve you, as soon as I am informed that he accept his Commission; and if he does, you may immediately call him to your Assistance before I am certified of his Acceptance. This will ease you of some Trouble, 'till I can regulate a few Matters of Importance here, which I hope to do in a little Time. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 16, 1776.

Sir: I do myself the honor to transmit Congress, a Copy of a Letter covering Copies of other Letters which I received Yesterday Evening from General Sullivan.

The Intelligence communicated by him is pleasing and Interesting, and such as may afford the greatest satisfaction; If the conduct the Canadians have discovered since his arrival among them is

Ingenious and sincere. This Account is contradicted by General Arnold's Letter to General Schuyler, of which a Copy is also Transmitted.

General Sullivan mentions his having given Commissions to some of the Canadians, as a measure founded in necessity and requests my approbation of it; but not considering myself impowered to say any thing upon the Subject, it may not be improper for Congress to give

74. John Whitcomb, brother of Col. Asa Whitcomb, of the Sixth Continental Infantry. At this time he was major general of Massachusetts Militia. He declined the offered brigadier general's commission in the Continental Army.

him their Opinion in this Instance. I have also inclosed Copies of General Schuyler's Letters, received at the same time. they contain Accounts respecting the Indians, variant from what were reported by Mr. Kirkland, but amounting to the same thing, the probability of the Savages attacking our Frontiers. By last night's post, I had information of a Capture made by our Armed Vessels, of one of the Transports, with a Company of Highlanders on board bound to Boston; The inclosed extract of Genl. Wards letter to me will give you the Intelligence more particularly. There are Accounts in the City mentioning other valuable prizes, but as General Ward has said nothing of them, I fear they want Authenticity.

I beg leave to mention that a further sum of Money will be wanted for our Military Chest by the time it can be sent; the inclosed Note from the Pay Master General shews the necessity for it and I may add, besides his estimate of Drafts to be made, there are the claims of the Eastern Troops at Boston, for three or four Month's pay not included, and now due.

Col: McGaw is arrived with part of his Battalion and by Wednesday Evening the whole, both of his and Col: Shee's will be here as I am told.

As it is and may be of great Importance, to have a Communication with the Jerseys and Long Island, I have had several Fiat Bottom Boats built for the purpose, and have thoughts of getting more for Passaic and Hackensack Rivers where they may be equally Necessary for the Transporting our Army, or part of it occasionally, or succours coming to or going from it. I am etc.⁷¹

71. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

***To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS**

New York, June 17, 1776.

Sir: The Inclosed came to my hands, as a private Letter from General Sullivan. As a private Letter, I lay it before Congress.⁷⁸ The tendency (for it requires no explanation) will account for the contrast between it and the Letter of Genl. Arnold.

That the former is aiming at the Command in Canada, is obvious. Whether he merits it or not, is a matter to be considered; and that it may be considered with propriety I think it my duty to observe, as of my own knowlege, that he is active, spirited, and Zealously attach'd to the Cause; that he does not want Abilities, many Members of Congress, as well as myself, can testify. But he has his wants, and he has his foibles. The latter are manifested in a little tincture of vanity, and in an over desire of being popular, which now and then leads him into some embarrassments. His wants are common to us all; the want of experience to move upon a large Scale; for the limited, and contracted knowledge which any of us have in Military Matters stands in very little stead; and is greatly over balanced by sound judgment, and some knowledge of Men and Books; especially when accompanied by an enterprizing genius, which I must do Genl. Sullivan the justice to say, I think he possesses; but as the Security of Canada is of the last Importance to the well being of these Colonies, I should like to know the Sentiments of Congress, respecting the Nomination of any Officer to that Command. The Character I have drawn of Genl. Sullivan is just, according to my Ideas of him. Congress will be pleased therefore to determine

78. Sullivan's letter, dated June 7, 1776, is in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*. Washington, apparently, kept no copy of it. It is printed in Force's *American Archives*, Fourth Series, vol. 6,938.

upon the propriety of continuing him in Canada, or sending another, as they shall see fit. Whether Genl. Sullivan knew of the promotion of Genl. Gates (at the time of his Writing) and that he had quitted the department he left him in, when he March'd his Brigade from hence to Canada I cannot undertake to say, nor can I determine whether his wish to be recalled would be chang'd by it if he did. I shall add no more than my respectful Complimts to Congress, and that I have the Honour to be &ca.

To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF PENNSYLVANIA

New York, June 17, 1776.

Sir: I was this Evening honoured with yours of the 15 Inst, and It is with no small degree of pain that I am under the necessity of Informing you It is out of my power at this time to comply with the request made by your Honourable body. The many Important works carrying on for the defence of this place⁸⁰ against which there is the highest probability of an Attack being made in a little time, will not allow me to spare from hence any person who has the least skill in the business of an Engineer nor have I but one on whose Judgment I would wish to depend in laying out

80. Congress had authorized the Committee of Safety in Philadelphia to erect a redoubt at Billingsport and throw obstructions across the Delaware at that place, for the purpose of opposing the progress of the enemy's ships up the river, and had agreed that the same should be constructed at the Continental expense. The committee had requested the Commander in Chief to send them an engineer to plan and superintend these works.— *Sparks*.

any work of the least consequence. Congress well know my wants in this Instance, and several of my late Letters to them, have pressed the appointment of Gentlemen qualified for this business; added to this, on account of the deficiency, I have not been able to secure or Improve Two posts in the Highlands, esteemed of the utmost Importance to prevent the Enemy from passing up the North River and getting into the Interior parts of this Colony, should our attempts to stop them here prove ineffectual. But I beg you to be assured Sir and to Inform the Committee, that as soon as It is in my power, I shall with infinite pleasure direct a person to attend them for two or three days. If the service will not admit of a longer absence, in order to trace out such works and plans for carrying them on, as shall appear necessary and wishing you to ascribe my non-compliance, to want of ability and not of inclination to perform your request. I have the honor, etc.⁸¹

[P.H.S.]

81. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 17, 1776.

Sir: I beg leave to inform Congress, that General Wooster has repaired to Head Quarters in obedience to their resolve transmitted him, and shall be extreamly glad If they will give me such further direction about him, as they may conceive necessary; he is desirous of seeing his Family in

Connecticut, as I am informed, having been a good while from it. I shall wait their Instructions as to his future Employment. I am &ca.⁷⁹

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 20, 1776.

Dear Sir: I herewith transmit you, sundry Resolves of Congress respecting the Indians, the fortifying Fort Stanwix &c. and for rendering more easy and commodious, our Passes into Canada. As the Resolves are of an interesting, and important Nature, I must request your particular Attention to them and most active Exertions for accomplishing, and carrying the whole into Execution with all possible Dispatch.

I am hopeful the Bounty Congress have agreed to allow, as you will perceive by the last Resolve, will prove a powerful Inducement to engage the Indians in our Service, and their Endeavours to make Prisoners of all the Kings Troops they possibly can.⁹⁸ You will use every

79. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

98. The resolves of June 17, 1776, were a part of the report of the Committee of the Whole upon measures to be taken. Apparently Gates, Schuyler, and Washington contributed ideas, This particular resolve authorized General Washington to employ such Indians as he should take into the service in any place where he should think they would be most useful and to offer them a reward of \$100 for every commissioned officer and \$30 for every private soldier of the King's troops that they should capture in the Indian country or on the frontiers of the Colonies.

Method you shall judge necessary, to conciliate their Favour, and to this End, are authorised to promise them a punctual Payment, of the Allowance Congress have determined on for such Officers and Privates belonging to the King's Army, as they may captivate and deliver us.

June 21, 1776.

I have this Moment received your Favours of the 15th. and 17th. and the Post being about to depart have not Time to answer them fully. I shall only add that Lady Johnson⁹⁹ may remain at Albany, 'till further Directions. I am, Sir, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 20, 1776.

Sir: I am now to acknowledge the receipt of your Favours of the 14th and 18th. instant, and the interesting resolves contained in them, with which I have been honored.

The several matters recommended to my attention, shall be particularly regarded, and the directions of Congress, and your requests complied with, in every instance, as far as is in my power.

The Institution of a War Office is certainly an Event of great importance, and in all probability will be recorded as such in the Historic Page. The Benefits derived from it, I flatter myself will be considerable tho' the plan, upon which it is first formed may not

99. Mary, Lady Johnson, wife of Sir John.

be entirely perfect. This like other great Works in its first Edition, may not be entirely free from Error. Time will discover its Defects and experience suggest the Remedy, and such further Improvements as may be necessary; but it was right to give it a Beginning.⁹⁰

The Recommendation to the Convention of New York for restraining and punishing disaffected Persons, I am hopeful will be attended with salutary consequences, and the prohibition against exporting Provisions appears to have been a measure founded in sound Policy, lest proper supplies should be wanted wherewith to subsist our Armies.

I have transmitted General Schuyler, the resolves about the Indians, and the others on which he is to act, and have requested his strict attention and exertions in order to their being carried into Execution with all possible Dispatch.

I note your request respecting Mr. Hancock;⁹¹ he shall have such Directions as may be necessary for conducting his Office and I am happy he will have so early a remittance for paying the Troops in his Department.

The Silver and Paper Money designed for Canada will be highly serviceable, and I hope will be the means of reestablishing our Credit there in some degree with the Canadians, and also encourage

our Men, who have complained in this Instance; when it arrives, I will send it forward under a proper Guard.

I have communicated to General Gates the Resolve of Congress for him to repair to Canada, and directed him to view Point au Fere,⁹² that a Fortress may be erected if he shall judge it necessary; he is preparing for his command and in a few days will

90. The duties of the board are described in the resolves of Congress of June 12 and 13. (See note to Washington's letter to the President of Congress, June 13, 1776, *ante*.)

91. Ebenezer Hancock Deputy Paymaster General of the Continental Army.

92. A point of land on the western shore of Lake Champlain between Isle aux Noix and Isle la Motte.

take his Departure for it: I would, fain hope his arrival there will give our Affairs, a complexion different from what they have worn for a long Time past, and that many essential Benefits will result from it.

The kind attention Congress have shewn to afford the Commander in Chief here every assistance, by resolving that recommendatory Letters be written to the conventions of New Jersey, New York and the Assembly of Connecticut, to Authorize him to call in the militias in cases of exigency, claims my thankful acknowledgments and I trust, if carried into execution, will produce many advantages, in case It may be expedient to call in early reinforcements; the delays Incident to the ordinary mode may frequently render their aid too late and prove exceedingly Injurious.

I this Evening received Intelligence of the 19th. instt. from Captn. Pond⁹³ of the Armed Sloop Schuyler, of his having taken, about 50 miles from this on the South side of Long Island, a Ship and a Sloop bound to Sandy Hook: The Ship from Glasgow with a Company of the 22d Regiment, had been taken before by one of Commodore Hopkins Fleet, who took the Soldiers out and ordered her to Rhode Island, after which she was retaken by the Cerberus and put under the convoy of the Sloop. As Captain Pond informs, there were five Commissioned Officers, Two Ladies and four Privates on board; they are not yet arrived at Head Quarters; inclosed is an Invoice of what they have on Board.

General Wooster having expressed an inclination and wish to wait on Congress, I have given him permission, not having any occasion for him here. he sets out this morning.

93. Capt. Charles Pond. His letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

I have been up to view the grounds about Kings Bridge, and find them to admit of many Places well calculated for defence, and esteeming it a Pass of the utmost importance have ordered Works to be laid out and shall direct part of the two Battalions from Pennsylvania, to set about the erection immediately, and will add to their Numbers several of the Militia, when they come, in to expedite them with all possible Dispatch;⁹⁴ their consequences, as they will keep open the Communication with the Country, requires the most speedy completion of them.⁹⁵ I have the Honor to be &c.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 21, 1776.

Sir: I was this morning honored with your favor of the 19th Instant, with sundry resolves of Congress, which came to hand after I had closed mine of the 20th. I shall appoint a Deputy Muster Master General, as soon as I can fix upon a proper person for the Office, and direct him immediately to repair to Canada.

Mr. Bennet the Bearer of this, delivered me a Letter to day from General Schuyler, inclosing the Proceedings of the commissioners of Indians affairs, at a meeting at Albany, in consequence of the Resolution of Congress (as they say) which I transmitted the 7th Instant, for engaging the Indians in our service. The Gentlemen appear to me to have widely mistaken the views of Congress in this Instance, and to have formed a plan for engaging such Indians,

94. These works embraced the fort on an eminence near the Hudson River, called Fort Washington, the redoubts at Jeffreys Point, and on the hills north and east of Fort Washington, breastworks at Kings Bridge, and Fort Independence, on the north side of Harlem Creek near its junction with the Hudson.

95. This letter was read in Congress on June 24, and instances the functioning of the new Board of War in being referred to it.

as were not in contemplation. I cannot Account upon what principles they have gone, as a part of their proceedings shew they are about to hold a conference with the Six Nations. I suppose they esteemed what they have done, a necessary measure, a Copy of which I have the Honor to inclose you.

I shall now beg leave to lay before Congress, a proposition made by Captain Leary¹ of this City in behalf of a body of men who are desirous of being employed in the Continental Service, as a Troop of Horse, and at the same time to offer my Opinion that such a Corps may be extremely useful in many respects. In a march they may be of the utmost service, in reconnoitring the Enemy and gaining Intelligence, and have it in their power to render many other Important benefits. The Terms on which they are willing to engage are inclosed, which seems to me moderate and reasonable. I am also Informed, that another Company, might be readily made up and most probably upon the same Terms. I would therefore submit the propriety and expediency of the measure to the consideration of Congress, and wish their Opinion, whether it will be agreeable to them that both or either of them should be formed, and incorporated in this Army, on the Terms proposed by Captain Leafy if it can be done. I have the Honor to be &ca.²

1. Capt. John Leary, jr. His proposal was for a troop of horse 40 strong (both officers and men) at 8 shillings per day, the men to find themselves and furnish their own horses and equipment. This document is in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

2. In the writing of Alexander Contee Hanson.

To THE COMMITTEE OF ESSEX COUNTY, NEW JERSEY⁸²

New York, June 17, 1776.

Gentn.: The absolute necessity of preventing all corespondence between the Inhabitants of this Country and our Enemies, obliges me to every degree of Intelligence, that lead to the Channel of such Intercourse. Doctor William Burner of New Ark can inform you of certain Insinuations and charges against part of the Army under my Command, as if they were liable to bribery and Corruption, in permitting persons to go from Staten Island to the Men of War at or near Sandy Hook, and as the Person from whom he has received his Intelligence, resides at New Ark, within the district of your Committee, I must request it, as a Matter of great importance, that your Committee will as soon as possible call on David Ogden Esqr., to declare who the person was, who informed him, that he had engaged the guard of the Rifle men at Staten Island, to carry him on Board the Men of War; with all the circumstances within his knowledge; and also that you do call on the person whom he points out, to be his Informant, to declare every Circumstance within his knowledge, relative to the Matter. I am &c.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, June 23, 1776.

Sir: By last Night's Post I was favoured with yours of the 16th. Inst., containing the interesting Intelligence of your having obliged the King's Ships to quit their Stations, and of the further Captures of two Vessels from Glasgow,

82. Dr. William Burner was chairman of the committee.

with Highland Troops on Board. These Events are extremely pleasing, and I flatter myself the former will be attended with salutary Consequences. It will give our little Squadron, a better Opportunity of safely bringing in such Prizes, as they may have the Fortune to take, and be the Means of more Transports, and other of their Vessels falling in our Hands in all Probability. The scheme of a Decoy Ship may answer many good Purposes, and if we get a few more of the thirty two Transports in Addition to those we have already, the Highland Corps will be pretty well broken and disconcerted.

With Respect to a Paymaster and Payment of the Troops, Congress have informed me in a Letter of the 14th. Inst. that they have appointed Ebezr. Hancock Esqr. to that Office, and that the Day after, Money would be sent him for paying the Troops in the eastern Department. I hope it will arrive in a few Days, that their Claims may be discharged, and the Grounds of their Dissatisfaction removed.

The Invalids you mention, may be turned over to other Regiments 'till further Orders, taking Notice of the Time, and a List of their Names, and transmitting them to the Colonels, or Commanding Officers of the respective Regiments to which they belonged; that they may not be included in their Abstracts after that Time, and double Pay be drawn for them.

I have inclosed you Copies of sundry Resolves of Congress, which I request you to communicate to the Persons they respect, that they may govern

themselves accordingly. That, about Vessels taken, which sailed from Boston with Effects while the King's Troops possessed it, you will transmit to the different Agents for the Continental armed Vessels, and that respecting Ordinance Stores, to Commodore Manley. I have sent the original Invoice of them and do appoint to act in Behalf of the Continent, in Conjunction with such Person, as the Commodore shall choose, for ascertaining their Value. This you will please to notify him of. They must be qualified as the Resolve directs, and pursue the Mode pointed out by it. When the Valuation is made, they will annex the Report under their Hands, to the Invoice, and deliver them to you, in

Order to their being forwarded to me. The Report may mention that they were sworn and by whom. I am, Sir, etc.

To COLONEL JAMES CLINTON

Head Quarters, New York, June 23, 1776.

Sir: Yours of the 20th. and 22nd. Inst. are both safe to Hand. The Person you was to seize by Warrant, you are immediately to send with the Papers to this Place in Charge of an Officer you can confide in. In this no Time is to be lost.¹⁵

It is out of my Power to assist you in procuring Arms; I must, therefore, urge you to make Application to the Convention, Committees &c. who, I hope, will supply you.

Your Letter of the 20th. I shall answer the first Opportunity, and am, in Haste, etc.

15. Fletcher Matthews, a New York loyalist. He was suspected of complicity in the so-called Hickey Plot.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 23, 1776.

Sir: I herewith transmit you an extract of a Letter from General Ward which came to hand by last night's post, containing the agreeable Intelligence of their having Obliged the Kings Ships to leave Nantasket Road, and of two Transports more being taken by our Armed Vessels with Two hundred and ten Highland Troops on board.¹¹

I sincerely wish the like success had attended our Arms in another Quarter, but it has not. In Canada the situation of our Affairs is truly alarming. The inclosed Copies of Generals Schuyler, Sullivan, and Arnold's Letters will inform you, that General Thompson has met with a repulse at three Rivers and is now a Prisoner in the hands of General Burgoyne, who, these Accounts say is arrived with a considerable Army;¹² nor do they seem to promise an end of our misfortunes here; It is greatly to be feared that the next advices from thence will be, that our shattered, divided and broken Army, as you will see by the return, has been obliged to abandon that Country and retreat to avoid a greater

Calamity, that of being cut off, or becoming Prisoners. I will be done upon the Subject and leave you to draw such conclusions, as you conceive from the state of Facts, are most likely to result, only adding my apprehensions that one of the latter events, either that they are cut off, or become Prisoners, has already happened, if they did not retreat while they had an opportunity.

General

11. Several British armed ships had kept possession of Nantasket Road from the time Boston was evacuated. On June 13, in the evening, General Ward ordered 500 men and a detachment of the train of artillery with a 13-inch mortar, two 18-pounders, and some small cannon, under the command of Colonel Whitcomb, to take post on Long Island and annoy the British ships. The necessary works were thrown up in the night, and the next morning the cannon and mortar opened a fire, and soon drove the vessels out of the harbor. The fleet, 13 in number, consisted of the *Renown*, of 50 guns, several smaller ships of war, and transports with Highland troops on board. They blew up the lighthouse as they went off, and put to sea.— *Sparks*.

12. Thompson had been ordered against Three Rivers by Sullivan. Schuyler's, Sullivan's, and Arnold's letters are in the *Washington Papers*. Arnold's, dated June 13, 1776, is addressed to Schuyler and is printed in *Spark's Letters to Washington*, vol. 1, p. 529.

Schuyler and General Arnold seem to think it extremely probable, and if it has taken place, it will not be easy to describe all the fatal consequences that may flow from it. at least our utmost exertions will be necessary, to prevent their Improving the advantages they have gained to our greater misfortunes. General Gates will certainly set out to morrow and would have gone before now, had he not expected to receive some particular Instructions from Congress and which Col. Braxton¹³ said, he imagined would be transmitted here.

Inclosed is a Copy of a Letter from Genl. Arnold, respecting some of the Indian Tribes to General Schuyler and of a talk had at Albany with thirteen of the Oneidas; they seemed then to entertain a friendly disposition towards us, which I wish may not be changed by the misfortunes we have sustained in Canada. I am &ca.¹⁴

13. Carter Braxton, a Delegate to Congress from Virginia.

14. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To HENRY BROMFIELD

New York, June 25, 1776.

Sir: The Honble Congress having determined a Valuation shall be made of the Ordinance Stores taken last Fall by Captain Manley, and directed me to appoint a Person in Behalf of the Continent to do it, in Conjunction with one to be chosen by Captain Manley, as you will perceive by the inclosed Resolve, I must request the Favour of you to undertake the Business.

I have transmitted the original Invoice to Major General Ward upon which you are to act.

It will be necessary to qualify, as the Resolve directs, and after the Estimate is made, to annex it to the Invoice under your Hands.

General Ward will forward it to me when it is finished, and praying your Excuse for this Trouble and Liberty.¹⁹ I am, etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 24, 1776.

Dear Sir: On the 20th. Inst. I received your two Favors of the 15th. and 17th. by Bennet, and Yesterday Evening that of the 19th. continued to the 20th. with General Sullivan's Letter and Return, and the several Copies you inclosed.

The Accounts transmitted by General Sullivan

19. The same letter was sent to Commodore John Manley.

are truly alarming, and I confess, I am not without Apprehension least the next Advices should be, that the unfortunate Defeat, and taking of General Thompson, has been succeeded by an Event still more unfortunate; the Destruction of a large Part, if not the whole of our Army in that Quarter. The weak, divided, and disheartened State in which General Sullivan represents it to be, does not seem to promise any Thing much more favourable, and is what General Arnold appears to be suspicious of. From the whole of the Accounts, supposing the Facts all true, there was nothing left to prevent their Ruin, but a Retreat. That, I hope, has been made as the only Means of saving themselves, and

rendering their Country the least Service. By Reason of the Succession of Ills that has attended us there of late, and this last one, I fear we must give up all Hopes of possessing that Country of such Importance in the present Controversy, and that our Views and utmost Exertions must be turned, to prevent the Incursions of the Enemy into our Colonies. To this End, I must pray your strictest Attention and request that you use all the Means in your Power, to fortify and secure every Post and Place of Importance on the Communication. You are as much impressed with the Necessity of the Measure, as any Man can be, and with Confidence I trust, that nothing you can do, will be wanting to effect it. If the Troops have retreated they will in a little Time, I am hopeful, compleat

such Works on the Passes, as to bid Defiance to the most vigorous Efforts of the Enemy, to penetrate our Country; especially when you are assisted by the Militia, which most probably are on their March ere now. Had this unfortunate Defeat not happened, the Militia were designed, not only to reinforce the Army in Canada, but to keep up the Communication with that Province, as you will see by recurring to the Resolve directing them to be employed.

Major General Gates, whom Congress had appointed to command after General Thomas's Death, will set out To-Morrow, and take with him one Hundred Barrells of Powder; out of which the Supplies necessary for the different Posts must be drawn. I have also directed Colo. Knox to send up the Cannon you wrote for, if they can be possibly spared from hence, with some Artillerists, a proper Quantity of Ball and other Necessaries for them and will in every Instance afford you all the Assistance I can. At the same Time I wish, if there are any Cannon at Ticonderoga or other Necessaries there or elsewhere, that you may want, and which can be spared from any other Post or Purpose, that you would get them in Preference to any here; as the Number we have, is not more than sufficient for the extensive and important Works, necessary to be maintained for the Defence of this Place.

In Respect to the Proceedings of the Commissioners

for raising two Companies of the Mohikander and Connecticut Indians, they appear to me not to answer the Views of Congress, as I presume they live within the Government of Connecticut and are to be considered in the same Light with it's Inhabitants and that their Design was extended to those who were not Livers among us, and were of hostile Character or doubtful Friendship, but in this I may be mistaken, and there may be a Necessity of engaging those you have to secure their Interest.

As to your Doubts about the Officer commanding in Canada, his Right to punish capitally; I should suppose, that a Necessity, independent of any Thing else, would justify the Exercise of such art Authority; but Congress having determined, that the Commanding Officer there, should inflict exemplary Punishment on those who violate the military Regulations established by them, has put

the Matter out of Question, and I apprehend every Commander there, has such Power, and of Right may, and should exercise it.

As Colonel Parsons has requested you to send the Person who is supposed to have murdered his Brother, I have no Objection to your doing it, if you judge it necessary. He, from what I have been told, designs to apply to Congress, for instituting some Mode of Trial for the Offence. I am, etc.

To COLONEL JAMES CLINTON

New York, June 25, 1776.

Sir: I received yours of the 20th Inst. and in Answer thereto, request you to draw out of your Regiment, all the Armourers, in it and set them immediately to Work. They will receive the same Pay as the Armourers here do, under the like Circumstances. You must endeavour to engage the one you mention, upon the same Terms that are given here; but if you cannot do better, you must continue him on those contained in your letter.

In Respect to keeping two of the Commissioners, if it is absolutely necessary, it must be done, till you are provided with an Engineer, or so long as they may be wanted. Will not one be sufficient? If it will, two need not be retained.

It being impossible to procure a sufficient Number of Tents for the whole Army, it will be necessary for you to procure a Quantity of thin Boards, which you must have put up in a close Manner to answer the Purpose. This is now doing for General Scott's Militia Brigade,¹⁸ and will do exceedingly well.

I cannot but consider the Pay of the Carpenters enormous and extravagant; nor can I suggest any good Reason, why they should receive more than those employed here; some of which, for Instance, Captain Bruen's Company from the Jerseys,

18. Brig. Gen. John Morin Scott, of the New York Militia.

are compleat Workmen, and can execute almost any Kind of Work in the best Manner. I desire you will endeavour to lessen their Pay, and to prevail on them to receive no more than what is given here.

The Pay Rolls will be settled by the Provincial Congress up to the last of April inclusive, as has been done with the other Troops raised in this Colony. The Abstracts after that Time, will be taken in, and paid by me as others are.

I observe by the Returns, that your Regiment is still greatly deficient in Arms, which is a Circumstance highly distressing at this Time. As I have no Prospect of getting any, that I know of; I request you to have no Dependence on me for a Supply, and that you will use every possible Method you can to procure what you want from the Country People, or wheresoever they can be had by purchasing. I am, etc.

P.S. The Powder of the Province in your Hands, and which is made up in Cartridges, you must not spare by any Means; But repay the Quantity of it out of continental Stock, if any.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, June 26, 1776.

Sir: Being in the greatest Distress here for Arms, without the most distant Prospect of obtaining a Supply, and as several have been lately brought into Boston, belonging to the Highlanders that have been taken, I request that you will immediately forward the remaining two Hundred Carbines (which in my Letter of the 28th. Ulto. I directed to be kept at Boston) to the Person at Norwich to whose Care the others were intrusted, with Orders to send them here with all possible Dispatch; together with the three Hundred mentioned in your Letter of the 9th. Inst., remaining Part of my former Order, which have not yet arrived here. You will direct him to send the whole by Land in Waggons without Delay, if when they arrive there, there shall appear the least Risk in their coming by Water.

The Places of these last two Hundred can be supplied out of the Arms lately taken, an exact Return of which with the Amount of the Prisoners and Stores if any, I shall be glad to have transmitted me. I am etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 27, 1776.

Dear Sir: Congress having disapproved the Proceedings of the Commissioners at Albany on the 13th. Inst., transmitted them in my Letter of the 21st., so far as they relate to raising two Companies of

Mohekan and Stockbridge Indians. In Compliance with their Resolve, a Copy of which is inclosed, I am to request you to put the most early and speedy stop to the same.

The Honble President observes in his Letter, that the Resolve for employing Indians, is conceived in such Terms as to give, at first View, a Latitude of Construction as to the Place in which they are to be raised, and the Commissioners must have understood it so, which led to the Mistake. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 27, 1776.

Sir: I this morning received by express, Letters from Generals Schuyler and Arnold, with a copy of one from General Sullivan to the former, and also, of others to General Sullivan, of all which I do myself the Honor to transmit you Copies. They will give you further account of the Melancholly situation of our Affairs in Canada and shew there is nothing left

to save our Army there, but evacuating the country. I am hopeful General Sullivan would retreat from the Isle a Noix without waiting for previous orders for that purpose, as from Generals Schuyler and Arnold's Letters, it is much to be feared by remaining there any considerable time, his retreat would be cut off, or at best be a matter of extreme difficulty. I would observe to Congress, that it is not in my power to send any Carpenters from hence to build the Gondolas and Gallies General Arnold mentions, without taking them from a Work equally necessary if not more so, here, of the same kind and submit it to them, whether It may not be advisable, as it is of great Importance to us to have a number of these Vessels on the Lake, to prevent the Enemy passing, to withdraw the Carpenters for the present from the Frigates building up the North River and detach them immediately, with all that can be got at Philadelphia, for that purpose.

I have the pleasure to inform you of another capture made by our Armed Vessels of a Transport on the 19th. instant with a Company of Highland Grenadiers on board; The Inclosed Extract of a letter from General Ward by last night's post, contains the particulars, to which I beg leave to refer you.

I have been honored with your favors of the 21st. and 25th. instant, in due order, with their Important Inclosures, to which I shall particularly attend. I have transmitted General Schuyler a Copy of

the Resolve of Congress respecting the Mohickan and Stockbridge Indians, and directed him to put an immediate Stop to the raising the two Companies.²⁷

The Quarter Master General has been called upon, for stopping the Tents designed for Massachusetts Bay and ordered to forward them immediately; he means to write Congress upon the Subject and hopes his conduct will not appear to deserve their reprehension; of this they will Judge from his relation of the matter.

Being extremely desirous to forward Intelligence from Canada to Congress, well knowing their anxiety about our Affairs there, I must defer writing upon some other matters I want to lay before them, till the next Opportunity, which I hope will be to morrow, when I will inform them fully upon the Subject of Rations, having desired the Commissary General to furnish me with some things necessary in that Instance. I have the Honor &ca.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 28, 1776.

Sir: In compliance with the request of Congress, contained in your favor of the 25th. instant and my promise of Yesterday, I do myself the Honor to inform you that the Cost of a Ration according to the Commissary General's estimate, from the 1st. of July to the 1st. of December will be from 8d. to 8½ York currency.³³

Having discharged the Obligation I was

27. Hancock's letter to Washington, dated June 25, 1776, directing that a stop be put to raising a force of Mohican and Stockbridge Indians, is in the *Washington Papers*.

33. Each colony had its own currency. By York, Washington meant the New York money. The rate of exchange varied between the different Colonies.

under in this Instance and finding that many applications have been made for victualling the Flying Camp. I would with all possible deference, wish Congress to consider the matter well before they come to any determination upon it.—Who the Gentlemen are, that have made offers upon this Occasion I know not, consequently my Objections to their appointment cannot proceed from personal dislike, nor have I it in view to serve Mr. Trumbull the Commissary General, by wishing him to have the directions of the whole supplies for his Emolument; because what ever Rations are taking from him, save him the Trouble of supplying provisions to the amount without diminishing his pay, that being fixed and certain; But what influences me, is a regard to the Public good. I am

morally certain if the Business is taken out of Mr. Trumbull's hands and put into another, that it may, and will in all probability be attended with great and many Inconveniences. It is likely, during the continuance of the War between us and great Britain, that the Army here or part of it, and the Troops composing the Flying Camp, will be frequently Joined, and under the necessity of affording each other mutual aid: If this Event is probable and most certainly it is, the same confusion and disorder will result, from having two Commissaries or one Commissary and one Contractor in the same Army and department, as did between Mr. Trumbull and Mr. Livingston, on the coming of the former to New York. I cannot discriminate between the two cases, and not foreseeing any good consequences will flow from the measure, but that many bad ones will, such as a clashing of Interest, a Contention for Stores, Carriages and many other things that might be mentioned,

I confess I cannot perceive the propriety of appointing a different person or any but the Commissary. I would also add, few Armies, if any, have been better and more plentifully supplied than the Troops under Mr. Trumbull's care in this Instance, which I should suppose ought to have considerable weight; especially, as we have strong reasons to induce us to believe, that a large share of the Misfortunes our Arms have sustained in Canada, sprang from a want of proper and necessary supplies of Provisions. Mr. Trumbull too I am informed, has already made provision in New Jersey for the Flying Camp which will be stationed there and employed proper persons in that Colony to transact the business. Incident to his departments in obedience to my orders and his full confidence that It was to come under his management. My great desire to see the Affairs of this Important post, on which so much depend, go on in, an easy, smooth, uninterrupted course has led me to say thus much upon the Subject and will I hope, If I am unhappy enough to differ in opinion with Congress, plead my excuse for the Liberty I have taken.

I would also beg leave to mention to Congress, the necessity there is of some new regulations being entered into respecting the Chaplains of the Army. They will remember, that application was made to increase their pay, which was conceived too low for their support. It was proposed that if, It could not be done for the whole, the number should be lessened and one, Chaplain be appointed to two Regiments and an additional allowance made them on that Account. The Latter expedient was adopted, which, at that time and while the Army continued altogether at one Encampment, answered or at least did not

produce any Capital inconveniences; But the Army now being differently circumstanced from what it then was, part here, part at Boston, and a third part detached to Canada, has Introduced much confusion and disorder in this Instance. nor do I know how it is possible to remedy the Evil, but by affixing one to each Regiment, with a salary competent to their support; no Shifting, no Change from one Regiment to another, can answer the purpose, and in many cases it could not be done, tho' the

Regiments should consent, as where detachments are composed of unequal numbers, or Ordered from different Posts. Many more Inconveniences might be pointed out, but these it is presumed will sufficiently shew the defect of the present establishment and the propriety of an alteration. What that Alteration shall be Congress will please to determine.

Congress, I doubt not, will have heard of the Plot that was forming among many disaffected persons in this City and Government for aiding the Kings Troops on their arrival. The matter I am in hopes, by a timely discovery, will be suppressed, and put a stop to, many Citizens and others, among whom is the Mayor, are now in confinement. It has been traced up to Governor Tryon, and the Mayor appears to have been a principal Agent, or go between him and the persons concerned in it. The plot had been communicated to some of the Army and part of my Guard engaged

in it. Thomas Hicky, one of them, has been tried and by the unanimous opinion of a Court Martial, is sentenced to die having inlisted himself and engaged others. The Sentence, by the advice of the whole Council of General Officers, will be put in execution to day at 11 O'Clock. The others are not tried. I am hopeful this example will produce many salutary consequences and deter others from entering into the like traiterous practices. The inclosed Copy of a resolve of the Provincial Congress will shew that some of the disaffected on Long Island, have taken up Arms. I have agreeable to their request, sent a party after them, but have not been able to apprehend them, having concealed themselves in a difficult Wood and morass.

General Gates set out on Tuesday with fine Wind, which has been fair ever since and would soon arrive at Albany.

I this moment received a Letter from Lieut. Davison of the Schuyler Armed Sloop, a copy of which I have inclosed and to which I beg leave to refer you for the Intelligence communicated by him.³⁴ I could wish General Howe and his Armament not to arrive yet, as not more than a 1000 Militia have yet come in, and our whole force, including the Troops at all the detached posts and on board the Armed Vessels, which are

34. Lieut. Joseph Davidson. His report (June 27) was that Howe's fleet of 130 sail had left Halifax for New York on June 9. General Howe arrived on the 25th, and the main body of his fleet on the 29th, the troops being immediately disembarked on Staten Island. Davidson's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

comprized in our returns, is but small and inconsiderable when compared to the extensive lines they are to defend and most probably the Army he brings. I have no further Intelligence about him than

what the Lieut. mentions, but it is extremely probable the Accounts and conjectures are true. I have &ca.

P. S: I have inclosed you a General Return of the Army.³⁵ The Accounts from the Lieutenant are certainly to be depended on, as some of the Prisoners in the retaken prizes were on board the Grey Hound and saw General Howe.³⁶

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 27, 1776.

Sir: Upon Information that Major Rodgers²⁸ was travelling thro' the Country under suspicious circumstances, I thought it necessary to have him secured. I therefore sent after him. He was taken at South Amboy and brought up to New York. Upon examination, he informed me, that he came from New Hampshire, the Country of his usual abode and pretended he was destined for Philadelphia on business with Congress, where he had left his family. As by his own confession he had crossed Hudson's River at New Windsor and was taken so far out of his proper and direct rout to

35. According to this return, dated June 28, the strength of the Army was 7,389 present and fit for duty, 744 sick, 231 absent sick, 1,931 on command, and 73 on furlough, a total of 10,368 rank and file, with 575 sergeants and 295 drums and fifes. The commissioned officers numbered 594. The regiment of artillery, not included in the above, had 365 officers and enlisted men fit for duty, with 185 on command and 34 sick.

36. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

28. Maj. Robert Rogers. Congress resolved (July 6): "That Major Rogers be sent to New Hampshire, to be disposed of as the government of that State shall judge best."

Philadelphia, this consideration added to the length of Time he had taken to perform his Journey; his being found in so suspicious a place as Amboy; his unnecessary stay there on pretence of getting some baggage from New York, and an expectation of receiving money from a person here of bad Character and in no circumstances to furnish him out of his own Stock; the Major's reputation and his being an half pay Officer encreased my Jealousies about him.

The Business which he informs me he has with Congress, is a secret offer of his services, to the end that in case it should be rejected, he might have his way left open to an employment in the East Indies to which he is assigned and in that case he flatters himself he will obtain leave of Congress to go to Great Britain.

As he had been put upon his parole by Congress, I thought it would be improper to stay his progress to Philadelphia, should he be in fact destined thither. I therefore send him forward; but to prevent imposition, under the care of an Officer, with Letters found upon him, which from their Tenor seem calculated to recommend him to Congress.

I submit it to their consideration whether it would not be dangerous to accept the offer of his services. I have &ca.

To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE OR, IN THEIR RECESS, THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY

New York, June 28, 1776.

Gentn.: By certain Advices just received I am informed that a Fleet consisting of 130 Sail left Halifax the 9th Instant, bound for this place and am well assured, that General Howe is already arrived at the Hook in the Greyhound; I do therefore, in the most pressing manner request, that you would not lose a moment's time in sending forward the Militia of your Province, as the Enemy will undoubtedly attack us in our Weak state, as soon as a Sufficient force arrives, to enable them to attempt it, with the least probability of Success; and altho' I cannot expect, by reason of the distance, that your Quota of Troops

will reach this so seasonably, as to afford assistance upon the first attack of the Enemy, yet I promise myself it will not occasion any delay in their March. Relying on your using all possible dispatch in this Business, I remain, etc.³⁰

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, June 28, 1776.

Dear Sir: Your Favour of the 25th and it's Inclosures with General Arnold's of the same Date, I received by Yesterday Morning's Express. That of the 24th came by this Day's Post.

I am sorry General Sullivan, in the Situation our Affairs were in, should have stop'd at the Isle Aux Noix, till he could obtain Orders for retreating further, thereby hazarding his Army, without a Prospect of Success, and rendering his Retreat liable to an Interception, or at least difficult, in Case the Enemy were in a Condition to pursue their Victory. For these Reasons I cannot but approve your Directions, and am hopeful they would arrive in Time, if he had not before left the Isle Aux Noix, by the Advice of his Counsel of War, and joint Intercession of his Officers.

My Letter of the 24th would shew you, had it been received, that from his Representation of Matters, I thought a Retreat the only Means left for the security of his Army, and doing the least essential service to their Country. If he gets off, I shall be happy that our Loss was so inconsiderable in Numbers, tho' I regret much the Captivity of General Thompson.

I have wrote Congress about Carpenters on General Arnold's Letter, and having none to spare from hence, have pointed out the Necessity of their sending some from Philadelphia, if not there, withdrawing for the present those employed up

30. Practically the same letter was sent to Gov. Jonathan Trumbull and to Brig. Gen. James Wadsworth, of the Connecticut Militia, at Dunham, this same day.

the North River, deeming it a Matter of infinite Importance to have a considerable Number of Gondolas on the Lakes, to prevent the Enemy from passing.

I have directed the Qt. Mr. General to procure and forward you the Anchors and Cables, Mill Saws and Files, if to be had. I have also requested Colo. Knox to examine, whether some more Field Pieces cannot be sent up, and I design to order a further Quantity of Powder to be forwarded you, to answer two Purposes; one that you may have proper supplies for the several Posts, and every Contingency, the other, because I do not wish to keep a larger Stock here than may be necessary, least any unfortunate Event should cast up, and we be deprived of more than we are yet able to loose.

I would have you make ready every Thing necessary for taking Post at Fort Stanwix, and when you are prepared, to use your utmost Industry for erecting and compleating the Work. Our most vigorous Exertions will be required in every Instance. I am convinced our Enemies will strain their every Nerve against us this Campaign, and try to injure us wherever we may be unprovided.

It will be extremely proper to forward on the Militia, for reinforcing the several Garrisons on the Communication, and securing the different Passes. I wish they were not so slow in repairing to the

Places of Rendezvous; but I would fain apprehend they will be in Time, to prevent any attempts our Enemies may have in View.

I am extremely sorry for your Indisposition and that you should be so harrassed by the Ague and Fever, and wishing you a perfect Recovery from it and a speedy one, I am, etc.

P.S. Congress by a Letter I received from the President last Night, have resolved upon four Thousand Men more to augment the Army in the Northern Department, and recommended the Colonies of New Hampshire immediately to send one Regiment of Militia, Massachusetts two, and Connecticut one.

They have also resolved on a Bounty of ten Dollars for every Soldier that will enlist for three Years, and requested the several Governments who are to furnish Militia to do it with all possible Expedition.

Our armed Vessels at the Eastward, have taken some valuable Prizes, and also three more Transports safely brought in with about 320 or 30 Highland Troops well accoutred. Captain Bedel,³¹ one of Commodore Hopkins's Fleet took two also with about 150 more. He put all the Prisoners on Board one of the Prizes: we fear she is retaken. The Arms he took into his own Vessel. The other Prize was retaken and again taken by another of our Vessels. ***³²

The Militia, ordered for the Defence of this Place, come in slowly. Not more than a Thousand are yet arrived. Our Force by no Means so strong as it should be.

It is said, and I beleive with Authority, that twenty Tons of Powder, and, £2000 Sterlg. worth of Goods have got into Providence. I am, etc.

31. Capt. Nicholas Biddle(?).

32. The omitted paragraph is the same as that in Washington's letter to the Massachusetts Legislature, June 28, 1776, *q. v.*

To THE BOARD OF WAR AND ORDNANCE

New York, June 29, 1776.

Gentlemen: I am now to acknowledge the receipt of your favor of the 21st. Inst.,⁴⁶ and the proceedings of Congress, with which you have been pleased to honor me. I must beg pardon for not having answered it before and trust the multiplicity of Business in which I have been engaged, since it came to hand, will apologize for the neglect. I shall particularly regard the several Important matters contained therein, and as far as opportunity and the Situation of Affairs will permit, use every means in my power to comply with your requisitions, and the Duties enjoined on me; sensible that our joint operations will contribute greatly to advance the Interest of America in General, and the particular department committed to my care. You may rest assured that I shall be happy to keep up a regular Correspondence, and will not fail to transmit you the most early Accounts of every measure, haveing the least tendency to this desirable end. I am, etc.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL WILLIAM LIVINGSTON⁴⁰

New York, June 29, 1776.

Dear Sir: Since Colo. Reed⁴¹ left this, I have received certain Information from the Hook, that about forty of the Enemy's Fleet have arrived there, and others now in Sight, that there cannot be a Doubt, but the whole Fleet will be in this Day, and To-Morrow. I beg not a Moment's Time may be lost in sending forward such Parts of the Militia, as Colonel Reed shall

46. It called for returns of the entire Army and the establishment of a regular correspondence with the Commander in Chief. This letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

40. Commander in chief of the New Jersey Militia stationed at Elizabethtown. Later he became governor of the State.

41. Joseph Reed, Adjutant General of the Continental Army.

mention.

We are so very weak at this Post, that I must beg you to order the three Companies, which I mentioned in my last for Staten Island, immediately to this City. If Colo. Herd⁴² is the Commanding Officer, I must request you will lay my several Letters wrote to you before him without Delay. I am, Sir, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 29, 1776.

Sir: I was last night honoured with your favor of the 26th. instant, and agreeable to your request, shall pay proper attention to the resolves it inclosed.

I observe the Augmentation Congress have resolved to make to the forces destined for the Northern department and the bounty to be allowed such Soldiers as will enlist for three Years. I hope many good consequences will result from these measures, and that from the Latter a considerable Number of Men may be induced to engage in the Service.

I should esteem myself extremely happy, to afford the least assistance to the Canada Department, in compliance with the desire of Congress and your requisition were it in my power; but it is not. The Return I transmitted Yesterday, will but too well convince Congress of my incapacity in this Instance, and point out to them, that the force I now have

42. Col. Nathaniel Heard. At this date he was brigadier general of New Jersey Militia.

is trifling, considering the many and important posts that are necessary and must be supported if possible. But few Militia have yet come in; the whole being about Twelve hundred, including the two Battalions of this City and one Company from the Jerseys. I wish the delay may not be attended with disagreeable circumstances and their aid may not come too late, or, when it may not be wanted. I have wrote; I have done every thing in my power to call them in, but they have not come, tho' I am told that they are generally willing.

The Accounts communicated yesterday thro' Lieut. Davison's Letter are partly confirmed, and I dare say will turn out to be true in the whole. For two or three days past three or four Ships have been dropping in and I just now received an Express from an Officer appointed to keep a look out on Staten Island, that forty five arrived at the Hook to day, some say more, and I suppose the whole fleet will be in within a day or two. I am hopeful before they are prepared to attack, that I shall get some reinforcements but be that as it may, I shall attempt to make the best disposition I can for our Troops, in order to give them a proper reception, and to prevent the ruin and destruction they are meditating against us.

As soon as the Express arrived last Night, I sent the Letters for the Northern

Colonies to the Quartr. Master General, with orders to forward them immediately.

When Monsr. Wiebert⁴³ comes, (I have not yet seen him) I shall employ him as Congress have directed. The Terms upon which he offers his service, seem to promise something from him.⁴⁴ I wish he may answer, and be skilled in the business he professes to know. I have &ca.⁴⁵

To THE COMMITTEE OF ESSEX COUNTY, NEW JERSEY

New York, June 30, 1776.

Sir: I received you favor by Mr. Treat, and cannot but consider the officer of Mr. Franklin's Guard extremely blameable, for his conduct; It is certainly his Indispensible duty, to conduct Mr. Franklin to the place the Convention have ordered without delay. The Circumstances you represent, his Letter to his Lady and the whole complexion of the case, afford a strong presumption; nay, much more, full evidence, that he means to escape if possible. he says in his Letter, "that, during his respite, the time between his writing and getting an Answer from Congress, something may turn up to make his removal improper, and at any rate to gain time will be of

43. Antoine Felix Wiebert, a French engineer, was commissioned by Congress a lieutenant colonel of Engineers on June 24.

44. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

45. Wiebert was captured by the British and, because he did not have this commission with him and refused to enter the British service, was confined in the provost in New York City and rigorously treated. After his exchange he returned to France and served as a volunteer on the *Bon Homme Richard*. John Paul Jones placed him in charge of the sick, wounded, and prisoners of that expedition on an island in the Texel.

advantage."

I have wrote to the Captain of his guard upon the subject, and as Mr. Franklin has evidenced a most unfriendly disposition to our Cause—As the Colony Convention have ordered him to Connecticut, for refusing to Comply with such terms, as they deemed necessary and proper for him to enter into, to procure his Liberty⁵³ —As he does not propose to sign the Parole which they formed, but has

proposed several alterations; I am of opinion, your Committee should interfere in the matter and give immediate orders to the officer of the Guard, to proceed with him, in execution of the duty wherewith he is charged; and, further, that, if you apprehend there is the least danger of his being rescued, or of the Guard, appointed to escort him, being remiss in their duty, that your Committee should appoint a strong escort for the purpose, and direct them to assist in performing the Views of the Convention, and conduct him securely to the place fixed upon to receive him.

I have inclosed the Letter for the officer of the guard, which having read, you will seal and transmit him. I am &c.

53. Gov. William Franklin, royalist Governor of New Jersey was the natural son of Dr. Benjamin Franklin. He was a strong loyalist and had been arrested as a public enemy; he was confined in Connecticut. After his exchange he became the president of the Associated Loyalists.

To THE CAPTAIN OF GOVERNOR FRANKLIN'S GUARD

Head Quarters, New York, June 30, 1776.

Sir: I understand that the Convention of New Jersey did resolve that Governor Franklin was an Enemy to the Liberties of America, and that he should be conducted under a safe Guard into Connecticut, and for that Purpose he was committed to your Charge. I have this Morning received Information, that you have halted with him at Hackensack. I would enjoin it upon you to set off immediately, and carry the Resolve of Convention into Execution. Delays are dangerous, and should any Accident happen, you never could answer your Neglect to our much injured Country. I would therefore again repeat to you, that it is my Advice, immediately on Receipt of this, to set forward on your Journey with Governor Franklin, and make all possible Dispatch for the Place you are ordered to. Governor Franklin, once had his Choice, and chose Connecticut; and it is not for you to hesitate on frivolous Pretences; but do your utmost to execute the Orders you have received in every Particular. I am, etc.

To COLONEL JAMES CLINTON

New York, June 29, 1776.

Sir: The Committee inform me that no Evidence has appeared against Fletcher Matthews, and desire his Papers may be delivered to him, which I would have you comply with, likewise of the Request of the Committees of Newburgh and New Windsor.

I have to inform you of the Arrival of about 50 Sail this Day at the Hook. This is a Part of a Fleet of 130 which left Hallifax under General Howe the 9th. Inst.

I would have you make all possible Preparation in Case the Enemy should have in View to push some of their Frigates up the North River, to give them a proper Reception. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, June 30, 1776.

Sir: I had the pleasure of receiving your favor of the 29th. early this morning, with which you have been pleased to honor me, together with the resolves for further Augmenting our Army.

The Battalion of Germans, which Congress have ordered to be raised, will be a Corps of much service and I am hopeful that such persons will be appointed officers, as will complete their Inlistments with all possible expedition.

I shall communicate to Colonel Stevenson and one of his Field Officers, what you have requested and desire them to repair Immediately to Philadelphia. It is an unlucky circumstance, that the Term of Inlistment of these three Companies and of the Rifle Battalion, should expire at this time,

when a hot Campaign is in all probability about to commence.⁴⁷

Canada, it is certain would have been an Important acquisition, and well worth the Expences incurred in the pursuit of it. But as we could not reduce it to our possession, the retreat of our Army with so little loss under such a variety of Distresses must be esteemed a most fortunate event. It is true the Accounts we have received, do not fully Authorize us to say, that we have sustained no loss but they hold forth a probable Ground for such conclusions. I am anxious to hear it confirmed.⁴⁸

I have the honor of transmitting you an extract of a letter received last Night from General Ward, If the Scheme the Privateers had in view, and the measures he had planned, had been carried into Execution, the Highland Corps will be tolerably well disposed of, but I fear the fortunate event has not taken place. In General Ward's Letter⁴⁹ was inclosed one from Lieut. Col. Campbell⁵⁰ who was made Prisoner, with the Highland Troops: I have transmitted you a Copy. This will give you a full and exact Account of the Number of Prisoners that were on board the four Transports, and will prove beyond a possibility of doubt, that the evacuation of Boston by the British Troops, was a matter

neither known or expected when he received his Orders. Indeed so many facts had concurred before to settle the matter, that no additional proofs were necessary.

When I had the Honor of addressing you Yesterday, I had only been Informed of the arrival of

47. By resolve of June 27 Congress directed that four companies of Germans should be raised in Pennsylvania and four companies in Maryland. They also resolved that six companies of riflemen should be enlisted, four of them in Virginia and two in Maryland, to serve for three years, and be formed into a regiment with three companies already raised in New York. Capt. Hugh Stephenson was appointed colonel of this regiment.

48. Brig. Gen. John Sullivan's letter to Washington gives the account of the retreat from Canada. This letter is in the *Washington Papers* and is printed in Sparks's *Letters to Washington*, vol. 1, p. 231.

49. Ward's letter of June 20 expresses his desire to be relieved of command. This letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

50. Lieut. Col. Archibald Campbell, of the Seventy-first Foot, British Army.

Forty five of the Fleet in the Morning; since that I have received Authentic Intelligence from sundry persons, among them from General Greene, that one hundred and ten sail came in before Night, that were counted, and that more were seen about dusk in the offing. I have no doubt, but the whole that sailed from Hallifax, are now at the Hook.

Just as I was about to conclude my Letter, I received one from a Gentleman, upon the Subject of calling the five Regiments from Boston to the defence of Canada, or New York, and to have Militia raised in their lieu. I have sent you a Copy, and shall only observe, that I know the Author well, his hand writing is quite familiar to me: he is a Member of the General Court, very sensible, of great Influence, and a warm and Zealous friend to the cause of America. The Expedient proposed by him is submitted to Congress.⁵¹ I am &ca.⁵²

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, July 1, 1776.

Sir: I received your Favours of the 20th. and 23rd. Ulto. and am happy to hear of the further Success of our armed Vessels in the Capture of the Transport with the Highland Grenadiers. If they have been fortunate enough to take the 11. Ships mentioned in your last,

51. Joseph Hawley. Extracts of his letters of May 21 and 27 suggesting that the troops at Boston be drawn to New York and their place supplied by militia are printed by Sparks, who prints the entire letter of May 21 in his *Letters to Washington*, vol. 1, p. 229. The May 21 letter is in the *Washington Papers*; that of May 27 is not.

52. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

I suppose we are in Possession of a large Share of the Highlanders ordered against us.

I am extremely sorry for your Indisposition and with to afford you all the Relief in my Power, and that the Situation of Things will admit of it. It is particularly unlucky that Mr. Whitcomb⁶¹ should refuse his Commission at this Crisis.

A Fleet has arrived at the Hook, which we suppose to be General Howe's, having received authentic Intelligence of his sailing from Hallifax on the 9th Ulto., with 132 Sail. One Hundred and ten came in on Saturday, more were in the Offing and a few had got in two or three Days before. We expect he will make an Attack, as soon as possible, and I am making every Preparation to receive him.

As we are extremely deficient in Arms here, and in great Distress for Want of them; I shall be glad if you will send all of those taken from the Highlanders, which you conceive can be possibly spared. Let them be sent immediately to Norwich, to the Persons there who were entrusted with the others, with Directions to forward them without Delay by Water, if there shall be no Risk; if there is, by Land.

You will observe, that the new Regiments to be raised in the Massachusetts, are to furnish their own; before they are received or can be taken into Pay. I am, etc.

P.S. It is not in my Power to send a General Officer now. I have but one Major General, and not Brigadiers more than are absolutely necessary nor so many. I have heard nothing more of the other three Hundred Carbines. They are not yet arrived.

61. Maj. Gen. John Whitcomb, of the Massachusetts Militia. He declined an appointment of brigadier general in the Continental Army.

TO THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 3, 1776.

Sir: Since I had the honor of addressing you and on the same day several Ships more arrived within the Hook; making the number that came in them, 110, and there remains no doubt of the whole of the Fleet from Hallifax being now here. Yesterday Evening 50 of them came into the Bay and Anchored on the Staten Island side.⁶⁷ Their views I cannot precisely determine, but am extremely apprehensive, as a part of them only came, that they mean to surround the Island and secure the whole stock upon it. I had consulted with a committee of the Provincial Congress on the Subject, and a person was appointed to superintend the business and to drive the Stock off. I also wrote to Brigadier General Herd⁶⁸ and directed him to the Measure, lest it might be neglected, but am fearful it has not been effected.

Our reinforcements of Militia are but small yet: Their amount I cannot ascertain, having not been able to procure a return. However, I trust, if the Enemy make an Attack, they will meet with a repulse, as I have the pleasure to inform you, that an agreeable Spirit and willingness for Action, seems to Animate and prevade the whole of our Troops.

As it is difficult to determine what Objects the Enemy may have in contemplation, and whether they may not detach some part of their force to Amboy and to ravage that part of the Country if not to extend their views farther;

I submit it to Congress whether it may not be expedient for them to repeat and press home their requests to the different Governments, that are to provide men for the Flying Camp, to furnish their quotas with all possible dispatch.⁶⁹ It is a matter of great Importance and will be of serious consequence to have

67. Howe's intention, as noted in his letter to Lord George Germain (July 7), was to land at Gravesend Bay, Long Island; but he became doubtful of the safety of it and began disembarking on Staten Island before July 4. The last ships of the fleet did not arrive until August 12. The strength of the British was in the neighborhood of 32,000 men.

68. Brig. Gen. Nathaniel Heard. The letter, dated June 29, 1776, was written and signed by Robert Hanson Harrison by Washington's direction. It is in the *Washington Papers*.

69. Congress had, by a resolve of June 3, ordered the formation of a Flying Camp, It was to be 10,000 strong and was designed to protect New Jersey and to prevent a sudden move by the British against Philadelphia while Washington's army was held in New York. After that city was evacuated and the army thus set free for field maneuvering the purpose of the camp merged with that of the main force, and the organization was not continued after the year 1776.

the Camp established in case the Enemy should be able to possess themselves of this River and cut off the supplies of Troops that might be necessary, on certain emergencies, to be sent from hence

I must entreat your attention to an application I made some time ago for Flints; we are extremely deficient in this necessary Article and shall be greatly distressed, If we cannot obtain a supply. Of Lead we have a sufficient Quantity for the whole Campaign, taken off the Houses here.

Esteeming it of Infinite Importance, to prevent the Enemy from getting fresh Provisions and Horses for their Waggon, Artillery &ca. I gave orders to a party of our Men on Staten Island, since writing General Herd, to drive the Stock off without waiting for the assistance or direction of the Committee there, lest their slow mode of transacting business might produce too much delay, and have sent this morning to know what they have done. I am this Minute informed by a Gentleman that the Committee of Elizabeth Town, sent their Company of Light Horse, on Monday to effect it, and that some of their Militia was to give their aid Yesterday; he adds he was credibly told last Night, by part of the Militia coming to this place, that Yesterday Evening they saw a good many stock driving of the Island and crossing to the Jerseys. If the business is not executed ere now, It will be impossible to do it. I have the Honor &ca.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 4, 1776.

Sir: This will be handed you by Colo: Stevenson whom I have ordered, with the Captains of the two Rifle Companies from Maryland to wait on Congress. They will point out such measures as they conceive most likely to advance the raising of the New Battalion and the Persons they think worthy of promotion that have served with them, agreeable to the inclosed List: I am not acquainted with them, but from their report and recommendation, which I doubt not is just, and if Congress will please to enquire of them, they will mention other proper persons for officers.

Only about 40 of the three Old Companies have reinlisted, which I shall form into one for the present and place under an Officer or two, 'till a further and complete Arrangement is made, of the whole Battalion. I have the Honor &ca.⁷⁰

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 4, 1776.

Sir: When I had the honor to address you on the 30th. Ulto., I transmitted a copy of a Letter I had received from a Gentleman a Member of the Honorable General Court of Massachusetts Bay, suggesting the improbability, of succours coming from thence in any reasonable

70. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison; the list of names of those recommended for appointment is in that of John Fitzgerald.

Time, either for the defence of this place, or to reinforce our Troops engaged in the Canada expedition. I am sorry to inform you, that from a variety of Intelligence his apprehensions appear to be just, and to be fully confirmed. Nor have I reason to expect, but that the supplies from the other two Governments, Connecticut and New Hampshire, will be extremely slow and greatly deficient in number. As it now seems beyond Question, and clear to demonstration, that the Enemy mean to direct their Operations and bend their most vigorous Efforts against this Colony and will attempt to Unite their two Armies, that under General Burgoyne, and the one arrived here. I cannot but think the expedient proposed by that Gentleman is exceedingly just and that the Continental Regiments now in Massachusetts Bay, should be immediately called from thence and be employed, where there is the strongest reason to believe their aid will be indispensably necessary.⁷² The expediency of the Measure I shall submit to the consideration of Congress, and will only observe as my Opinion, that there is not the most distant prospect of an attempt being made where they now are, by the Enemy, and if there should, that the Militia that can be assembled upon the shortest Notice, will be more than equal to repel it; They are well armed, resolute and determined, and will instantly oppose any Invasion that may be made in their own Colony.

I shall also take the Liberty again to

72. On July 8, on report of the Board of War, the Commander in Chief was vested with discretionary power to call to New York such of the Continental regiments in Massachusetts as had not already

been ordered to Ticonderoga. The militia were to supply their place at Boston. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*.)

request Congress, to Interest themselves in having the Militia raised and forwarded with all possible expedition, as fast as any considerable number of them can be collected, that are to compose the Flying Camp.⁷³ This I mentioned in my Letter of Yesterday, but think proper to repeat it, being more and more convinced of the necessity. The Camp will be in the Neighbourhood of Amboy, and I shall be glad, the Conventions or Committees of Safety of those Governments from whence they come, may be requested to give me previous notice of their marching, that I may form some plan, and direct Provision to be made for their reception. The disaffection of the People at that place and others not far off, is exceedingly great, and unless it is checked and overawed, it may become more general and be very alarming. The arrival of the Enemy will encourage it.

They or at least a part of them are already landed on Staten Island, which is quite contiguous and about 4000 were marching about it yesterday, as I have been advised and are leaving no Acts unessayed, to gain the Inhabitants to their side, who seem but too favourably disposed. It is not unlikely that in a little time they may attempt to cross to the Jersey side, and induce many to join them, either from motives of Interest or fear, unless there is a force to oppose them.⁷⁴

As we are fully convinced that the ministerial Army we shall have to oppose this Campaign, will be great and numerous and well know, that the utmost Industry will be used, as it already has been, to excite the Savages and every body of People

73. The 10,000 men for the Flying Camp were to be furnished from the militia of Pennsylvania, Delaware, and Maryland. They were to be, of course, in Continental pay.

74. "The enemy's fleet is now come up within twelve miles of us; and yesterday a large body of men, with Cortlandt Skinner at their head, landed on Staten Island, and dividing themselves into three bodies, traversed the whole Island, with a view of collecting stock and vegetables. The villainy and treachery of many of the inhabitants will give them some supplies; for though the General took every method to get off the stock, (force excepted,) they contrived by some means or other to evade it."—*Joseph Reed to Esther Reed (his wife)*, July 4, 1776. This letter is from Reed's *Life and Correspondence of Joseph Reed*.

to Arms against us whom they can Influence, It certainly behooves us to strain every nerve to Counteract their designs: I would therefore submit it to Congress whether, especially as our Schemes for employing the Western Indians do not seem to be attended with any great prospect of success

from General Schuyler's Accounts, It may not be advisable to take measures to engage those of the Eastward, the St. Johns, Nova Scotia, Penobscot &ca. in our favor. I have been told that several might be got, perhaps five or six hundred or more, readily to Join us. If they can, I should imagine, It ought to be done. It will prevent our Enemies from securing their friendship, and further, they will be of infinite service, in annoying and harrassing them should they ever attempt to penetrate the Country. Congress will be pleased to consider the measure and if they determine to adopt it, I conceive it will be necessary to Authorize and request the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay to carry it into Execution.

Their situation and advantages will enable them to Negotiate a Treaty and an Alliance better than it can be done by any persons else.⁷⁵

I have been honored with your two favors of the 1st. instant, and agreeable to the wishes of Congress, shall put Monsieur Wiebert in the best place I can, to prove his Abilities in the Art he professes. I shall send him up immediately to the Works erecting towards Kings Bridge under

75. On July 8 Congress resolved: "That General Washington have permission to call forth and engage in the service of the United States so many Indians of the St. Johns, Nova Scotia and Penobscot tribes, as he shall judge necessary, and that he be desired to write to the general court of the Massachusetts bay, requesting their aid in this business, and informing them that Congress will reimburse such expences as may be necessarily incurred." (See *Journals of the Continental Congress.*)

the direction of General Mifflin, whom I shall request to employ him.

I this Moment received a Letter from General Greene, an extract of which I have inclosed. The Intelligence it contains is of the most Important nature, and evinces the necessity of the most spirited and Vigorous exertions on our part.⁷⁶ The expectation of the Fleet under Admiral Howe,⁷⁷ is certainly the reason the Army already come, have not begun their Hostile operations. when that arrives we may look for the most interesting events and such as in all probability will have considerable weight in the present Contest. It behoves us to be prepared in the best manner, and I submit it again to Congress whether the Accounts given by these prisoners do not shew the propriety of calling the several Continental Regiments from the Massachusetts Bay Government, raising the flying Camp with all possible dispatch and engaging the Eastern Indians.

July 5.

General Mercer arrived here on Tuesday and the next morning was ordered to Powles Hook to make some Arrangement of the Militia, as they come in, and the best disposition he could to prevent the Enemy crossing from Staten Island, if they should have any such Views.

The distressed situation of the Inhabitants of Elizabeth Town and New Ark, has since induced me upon their application, to give up all the Militia from the Jerseys,

76. The extract, in the writing of George Lewis, is from Greene's letter of July 4, which is not found in the *Washington Papers*. The extract is filed with Washington's letter in the *Papers of the Continental Congress*.

77. Richard, Lord Howe, rear admiral and commander in chief of the British Fleet in North America.

except those engaged for Six Months. I am hopeful they will be able to repel any Incursions that may be attempted. Generals Mercer and Livingston⁷⁸ are concerting plans for that purpose. By a Letter from the Latter last night, I am informed the Enemy are throwing up small Works at all the passes on the North side of Staten Island, which it is probable they mean to secure. None of the Connecticut Militia are yet arrived, so that the reinforcement we have received, is very inconsiderable.

A Letter from General Schuyler with sundry inclosures, of which No. 1, 2. and 3. are exact Copies, this Moment came to hand and will no doubt claim as It ought to do the immediate attention of Congress. The evils which must inevitably follow a disputed Command are too obvious and alarming to admit a Moments delay, in your decision thereupon.⁷⁹ And altho' I do not presume to advise, in a matter

78. Gen. William Livingston.

79. By the time Gates's leisurely movements had carried him toward his Canadian command the army had retreated from Canada and had fallen down to Ticonderoga, Gates claimed the supreme command, but Schuyler demurred on the ground that Gates was to command in Canada only. The matter was submitted to Congress and, as Gates's influence was not yet as great with that body as it afterwards became, the decision (July 8) was against Gates, Hancock wrote him urging cordial cooperation with Schuyler. (See *Journals of the Continental Congress*.)

now of this delicacy, Yet as it appears evident that the Northern Army has retreated to Crown Point and mean to act upon the defensive only, I cannot help giving it as my Opinion, that one of the Major Generals in that Quarter would be more usefully employed here, or in the flying Camp, than there;

for it becomes my duty to observe. If another experienced Officer, is taken from hence in order to command the flying Camp, that your Grand Army will be entirely stripped of Generals who have seen service, being in a manner already destitute of such. My Distress on this Account; the Appointment of General Whitcomb⁸⁰ to the Eastern Regiments; a conviction in my own breast, that no Troops would be sent to Boston and the certainty of a number coming to this place, occasioned my postponing from time to time sending any General Officer from hence to the Eastward heretofore, and now I shall wait the Sentiments of Congress relative to the five Regiments in Massachusetts Bay, before I do anything in this matter.

The Commissary General has been with me this Morning concerning the other matter contained in General Schuyler's Letters respecting the Business of that department. He has I believe in order to remove difficulties recalled Mr. Avery; but seems to think it necessary in that case, that Mr. Livingston should be left to himself, as he cannot be responsible for persons not of his own Appointment. This matter should also be clearly defined by Congress. I have already given my Opinion of the necessity of these Matters, being under one General direction, in so full and clear a manner, that I shall not take up the Time of Congress to repeat it in this place.⁸¹ I am &c.⁸²

80. Gen. Jonathan Whitcomb.

81. Elisha Avery and Walter Livingstone's dispute over command of the commissary department of the Northern Army was an outcome of the Gates-Schuyler controversy. Schuyler's letter to Washington, dated July 1, 1776, outlining the matter, is in the *Washington Papers*. It is printed in Sparks's *Letters to Washington*, vol. 1, p. 247.

82. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL WILLIAM LIVINGSTON

Head Quarters, July 5, 1776.

Sir: Your Favour of the 4th. came safely to Hand. The situation of New Jersey is such, and the Apprehensions of the Inhabitants so justly excited, that I have concluded to discharg, the Militia from this Place, except those from Morris County, whose internal Situation is such, as to leave them nothing to fear from the Enemy. These I have posted in Bergen in Order to prevent any Communication, and to give the Enemy Obstruction in Case they should attempt to land in that Quarter, which with the Assistance of the Continental Troops posted there, I hope, they will be able

effectually to do. The Remainder of the Militia I have dismissed, as I have Reason to believe the Enemy is waiting for the European Fleet, and will not make a general Attack until it arrives; but we have not yet one Man from Connecticut. You will observe, I have dismissed the Militia from hence; but have not discharged them: as I am of Opinion a Part of them may be usefully employed in the immediate Defence of the Province. In this View they fall properly under your Command, and I would suggest to you the Propriety of stationing them in proper Places along the Shore, opposite to Staten Island, so as to relieve the Inhabitants from the Apprehensions they are under of being plundered, as well as preventing any Communication with the Enemy. There are a Number of People in Amboy who will undoubtedly open a Correspondence with them immediately and endeavour to excite Disaffection thro' the Province, now they feel themselves under some Kind of Protection. If it is practicable in the present Situation of Things, I am of Opinion, those Officers of Government, and the notoriously disaffected there, should be removed with all possible Expedition to less dangerous Places. That the Cattle and Sheep, and Horses on the Shores contiguous to Staten Island should be immediately drove back, the Ferries carefully attended to, and all Boats watched

that pass or attempt so to do. The Number of Men necessary for these Services, you will be able to ascertain better than I can; but in such Emergency it is better to exceed than fall Short.

As to Provisions for the Men, I presume, while the Militia are employed in the immediate Defence of the Province, the Expence, at least in the first Instance, will fall upon the Colony. How far the Continent will reimburse the Province, I can not determine; but the Necessity of some Supplies being collected, is so evident, that I make no Doubt the Convention will immediately go into it. In the mean Time I should think no Person could run any Risk, in doing what is immediately necessary, under your Appointment.

I have been the more induced to dismiss the Militia, that the New Levies (or six Months Men) may be forwarded as soon as possible; and I must request your Exertion for this purpose, as it is my Intention to have them here without a Moments Delay.

Since this Letter was begun another of your Favors came to my Hands, informing me, that the Enemy have thrown up two small Breast Works on the Cause Way from the Point.

You also request some experienced Officers to be sent over, which I would gladly comply with, if in my Power; but I have few of that Character, and those are so necessarily engaged here, that for the present I must refer you to General Mercer, whose Judgement and Experience may be depended upon. I have wrote him that I should endeavour to send over an Engineer as soon as possible.

From all Accounts we receive, I cannot think they have any serious Intentions at present, beyond making themselves Masters of Staten Island, guarding against any Attack from us, and collecting what Stock they can; but at the same Time it is highly prudent for you, to be in the best Posture of Defence you can. I am, Sir, etc.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL WILLIAM LIVINGSTON

Head Quarters, New York, 5 O'Clock P.M., July 6, 1776.

Sir: Your Favour of this Date, inclosing Major Duychinck's⁸³ Letter. was this Moment received. The known Disaffection of the People of Amboy, and the Treachery of those of Staten Island, who, after the fairest Professions, have shewn themselves our most inveterate Enemies, have induced me to give Directions that all Persons of known Enmity or doubtful Character, should be removed from Places, where they might enter into a Correspondence with the Enemy, and aid them in their Schemes. For this End, General Herd has Directions to apprehend such Persons, as from their Conduct had shewn themselves inimical, or whose Situations, Connections, or Offices, gave just Cause of Suspicion. I have no Knowledge of the Persons apprehended; but suppose General Herd had good Reason for taking hold of them. However, if there are any, whom, from your personal Knowledge and Opinion, you think maybe permitted to return, I have no Objection, and sending the others to Provincial Congress for their Disposal. But as to the former, I would suggest to you, that my Tenderness has been often abused, and I have had Reason to repent the Indulgence shewn them. I would shew them all possible Humanity and Kindness, consistent with our

83. Maj. John Duychinck, who seemed to have been a lieutenant colonel of Jersey Militia at this date. He deserted to the British. (See Washington's letter to Maj. Gen. John Sullivan, Feb. 22, 1777, post.) A copy of Duychinck's letter, dated July 5, 1776, informing of British troop movements, is in the *Washington Papers*.

own Safety; but Matters are now too far advanced to sacrifice any Thing to Punctilios.

I have given Direction to forward you a Supply of Ammunition; but must beg you to inculcate the utmost Frugality and Care of it, as we have no Superfluity. This Supply consists of Cartridges, some loose Powder and Lead. If you have any Occasion for Ammunition for Field Pieces, which the latter will not supply, I will endeavour to assist you; but I would wish you to make no more Draughts than are absolutely necessary.

General Mercer has just set off for Jersey. In his Experience and Judgment you may repose great Confidence. He will proceed to Amboy after conferring with you.

You will please to keep me constantly informed of the Proceedings of the Enemy, and be assured of every Assistance and Attention.⁸⁴ I am, etc.

To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

New York, July 7, 1776.

Sir: I have been honored with your favors of the 3d. and 4th. Inst. and return you my sincere thanks for your kind intention to afford me every assistance in your power, at this truly Critical and alarming period. The situation of our affairs calls aloud for the most vigorous exertions and nothing less will be sufficient to avert the impending blow. From four Prisoners taken the other day, we are Informed Genl. Howe has Already about Ten thousand Men, being joined by the Regiments from the

84. General Howe's headquarters were now at Staten Island. In a letter to Lord George Germain (July 7) he wrote: "I have the satisfaction to inform your Lordship, that there is great reason to expect a numerous body of the inhabitants to join the army from the provinces of New York, the Jerseys, and Connecticut, who in this time of universal apprehension only wait for opportunities to give proofs of their loyalty and zeal for government. Sixty men came over a few days ago with a few arms from the neighborhood of Shrewsbury in Jersey, who are all desirous to serve; and I understand there are five hundred more in that quarter ready to follow their example. This disposition among the people makes me impatient for the arrival of Lord Howe, concluding the powers with which he is furnished will have the best effect at this critical time; but I am still of the opinion, that peace will not be restored in America until the rebel army is defeated."

West Indies and some of the Highland Troops in his passage hither; that he is in daily expectation of the arrival of Admiral Howe and that nothing would be attempted till he came, having some from Halifax, in Consequence of Advices received a few days before, from England; that the Admiral was ready to Sail with a Fleet of one hundred and fifty Ships, with a large reinforcement to join him here, these Armies when United, you will readily conceive will be extremely Formidable and such as will require a large and Numerous one on our part, to oppose them. But yet I have been under the necessity of informing Colo. Silliman, that it will be impossible to Subsist the Horse of the three Regiments Ordered, and if it could be done, the Expence would be enormous and what I do not apprehend I have authority to Assent to. At the same time, knowing the Important Advantages that

may result from their Aid, I have intreated his exertions to prevail on the Men to come themselves. I hope, on the one hand they will see the propriety of my objecting to their Horses and on the other the Necessity there is of coming themselves. My Anxiety leads me to request a Continuance of your good offices in forwarding the Battalions Ordered with all possible dispatch. The Interest of America is now in the Ballance, and it behoves all Attached to her Sacred Cause and the rights of Humanity, to hold forth their Utmost and most speedy Aid. I are Convinced nothing will be wanting in your power to Effect.

The situation of the Northern Army is certainly distressing, but no relief can be afforded by me; this I am persuaded you will readily agree to. I should Suppose, If proper precautions are taken, the Small pox may be prevented from spreading. this was done at Cambridge, and I trust will be contrived by Generals Schuyler and Gates, who are well apprized of the fatal Consequences that may attend Its infecting the whole Army; but a small part of the Forces here have had it and were it not the case, neither policy or prudence would allow me to send any more from hence, that have seen the least of Service.—too many have been already detached; to part with more, would be to put all to the Hazard.

The retreat of the Army from Canada, I doubt not will occasion a General Alarm to the Frontier Inhabitants, and our Enemies, without question, will use every means they can suggest, to Excite the Savages against them. But I would feign hope, their Incursions will be prevented and repelled without much difficulty. The first opportunity I have, I will transmit a Copy of your Letter to Congress upon this Subject and request their attention to it. I am, etc.

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, July 7, 1776.⁸⁸

Sir: I received your Favour of the 30th. Ulto., and doubt not but the Powder claimed by the Assembly of New Hampshire was lent the Continent. The exposed Situation of their Frontiers renders every Precaution necessary for their Defence.

I think it would be proper, to send a Quantity of it to some safe Place on the Communication betwixt this and Boston, there to be ready in Case of Accident; or if it should be wanted. I therefore wish you to lodge at Norwich, which I suppose will be as secure as any other Place, from three to four

88. On this day Washington wrote to the Massachusetts Legislature: "I was yesterday honored with your favor of the 2d Inst: with the proceedings you have adopted in Compliance with the requisition of Congress and my application since, for which, and your kind wishes for my success, I beg your Acceptance of my most hearty thanks." This letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

Hundred Barrels.

In my Letter of the 1st., I desired you to send a Quantity of the Highlander's Musquets that were taken. I pray your Attention to my Request, and that they may come with all possible Expedition. The Deficiency here, in this essential Article is greatly alarming. I am extremely sorry, that your Indisposition has increased, and I hope in a little Time you will be relieved.

It is now before Congress to determine, whether the Continental Regiments at Boston, should not be ordered from thence; as there is almost a moral Certainty, that the Enemy mean not to make an Attack there, but to bend their whole Force against this Province.

Four Prisoners, that fell into our Hands last Week, on a seperate Examination agree, that General Howe being joined by some Regiments from the West Indies, and Part of the Scotch Highlanders in his Passage hither, has now about 10,000 Men; That a few Days before they left Hallifax an Express Packet arrived, ordering him to come to this Place, where he would be joined by Admiral Howe with a Fleet of 150 Sail, with Troops on Board, which was about to sail when the Packet did; That they are daily expected, which has been the Reason nothing has been yet attempted.

If Congress withdraw the Regiments, you will be instantly relieved; and if they do not, I must send (inconvenient as it is, to spare a General Officer at this critical Time) one to take the Command. I expect to know the Result of their Deliberations, in a Day or two.

It will be right to comply with the Order of the Board of War and Ordinance, and a List may be transmitted of the Persons you have judg'd most proper to fill the Vacancies. I am, Sir, with my best Wishes for your Recovery, etc.

To WILLIAM WATSON

New York, July 7, 1776.

Sir: I received yours of the 19th. Ult., and directed the Papers you wrote for to be transmitted you; but find upon Inquiry, they are not among any in my Possession now. Colonel Moylan, who used

generally to receive and examine the Papers appertaining to the Prizes, being called upon, says, that previous to his Departure from Cambridge, he made up all the Prizes Papers and put them in such a Channel as he thought most likely to convey them to the different Agents. He supposes these were with the Rest. He cannot recollect to whom they were delivered. If they cannot be got, you must try the Legality of the Captures, upon such Evidence, as you can collect from the Men who were in the Vessels when they were taken, and from other Circumstances.

If they were going to Nova Scotia, for the Purpose mentioned by the Claimants, I presume, it will not be difficult for them to prove it by Witnesses. I am, Sir, etc.

To COLONEL JAMES CLINTON

Head Quarters, New York, July 7, 1776.

Sir: I received yours by Major Rensselaer⁸⁹ and am pleased to find you are making the necessary Preparations to repel the Enemy in Case of an Attack.

I hope you will be able to get Arms sufficient for the Men under your Command who are destitute; but if not, you are to dismiss all those whom you cannot equip. I mean to confine myself to the Militia wholly, as it is equally absurd and unjust, to keep Men in continental Pay, who will be of no Service in Time of Action, for Want of Arms. It is, in Fact, amusing ourselves with the Appearance of strength, when at the same Time we want the Reality.

Colonel Knox informs me, he has no Carriages to spare; but you can have the Carriage Wheels, which with the Iron will be delivered to the Care of Major Rensselaer.

As to the Ball for the small Arms, they should be sent, if the Sizes could be ascertained, so as to fit the Musquets exactly; but as that cannot be done, I shall order a sufficient Quantity of Lead to be sent up, which you will direct to be cast into Balls suitable for your Purpose. You must furnish the Bullet Moulds in the best Manner you can, as there are none here.

With Regard to the Appointment of Doctor Tappen,⁹⁰ I would just mention, that as it is a Matter transacted between you and the Provincial Congress, with which I am quite unconnected, I would choose it should continue so. However, by renewing your Application to the Congress, you will doubtless receive a satisfactory Answer. I am, etc.

89. Maj. John Van Rensselaer, of the New York Militia.

90. Peter Tappan. He had been a lieutenant of New York Militia in 1775, and was at this date a surgeon's mate in the Continental Hospital.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 8, 1776.

Sir: Congress having resolved to raise a Regiment of Germans, to counteract the designs of our Enemies, I must beg leave to recommend to their Notice John David Woelpert,⁹⁴ now a first Lieutenant in Colonel Shee's Battalion, to the Office of Captain in said Regiment.

I am personally acquainted with him and know that he joined the Virginia forces under my command in the Year 1754, and continued in service the whole War, during which he conducted himself as an active, vigilant and brave Officer. He is a German and his Merit as a Soldier entitles him much to the Office he wishes for. I have &c.⁹⁵

To MAJOR GENERAL ARTEMAS WARD

New York, July 9, 1776.

Sir: The inclosed Declaration will shew you, that Congress at Length, impelled by Necessity, have dissolved the Connection between the American Colonies, and Great Britain, and declared them *free and independent States*; and in Compliance with their Order, I am to request you will cause this Declaration to be immediately proclaimed at the Head of the Continental Regiments in the Massachusetts Bay.

It being evident, from a Variety of concurring Circumstances, that the British Armies mean to direct their most vigorous Operations this Campaign against the State of New York, to penetrate into it by Way of the Lakes, and the North River and to unite their Attacks. The Importance of it, has induced Congress to take further

94. John David Woelper (Wilper). He was commissioned first lieutenant, Third Pennsylvania Regiment, in January, 1776; captain July 17, 1776; transferred to the Invalid Regiment June 11, 1778;

served to April, 1783. On July 16, 1776, Congress resolved that another company be added to the German battalion and that Woelper be appointed to command it.

95. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison. Washington also wrote, this same day, practically the same letter to the Pennsylvania Committee of Safety recommending Woelper. This letter is printed in *Force's American Archives*.

Measures, for baffling their Designs, and rendering it more secure. You will see by the Resolves now transmitted, that the northern Army is to be augmented by Part of the Troops under your Command; and I do desire that you will immediately detach for that Purpose, three of the fullest Regiments forthwith to march to Ticonderoga, or such other Place as the said Army may be at, and put themselves under the Order and Directions of the General Officer commanding the same.

You will also perceive, that Congress have resolved, that the Arms taken in the Scotch Transports should be sent here. The President informs me, he has wrote to the Agents respecting them; but as I presume they are in your Possession, or in some of the Stores by your Order, you will have the Whole of them forwarded with all possible Dispatch, in the usual Rout and with necessary Directions.

Congress have made some Alteration in the Establishment of Chaplains, and advanced their Pay; as they have that of the regimental Surgeons, as you will see by their Proceedings, Copies of which in these Instances are also transmitted.

You will be particularly attentive to hastening the March of the three Regiments, and give proper Orders for their Rout, and to the Commissary and Quarter Masters, that every Thing necessary for the same may be immediately provided. Their Aid is much wanted, and may be of the utmost Importance. When they have marched, you will be pleased to put the remaining Regiments under the Command of the oldest Colonel, with such Instructions as you may judge necessary and then retire, if it shall be agreeable to you, for the Recovery of your Health, as I cannot

possibly request you longer to continue, and wishing you a speedy Restoration of it, I am, etc.

P.S. I would have you consult with proper Persons and some of the Members of the General Court, respecting the Route of the three Regiments to be detached to the northern Army, and if they shall be of Opinion, that they may probably arrive there as soon, if they come to Norwich, and embark from thence for Albany, I should think that would be most preferable for two Reasons, First, it will ease the Troops of much Fatigue and second, they might, if there was a Necessity for it, afford Succour here as they passed. I do not mean to give any Direction in the Matter, nor do I wish this

Mode to be adopted, unless there appears a Probability of their arriving where they are intended to be sent by Congress, as early as if they pursued their March by Land and across the Country.

To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE OR COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF THE STATE

New York, July 9, 1776.

Gentn.: You will perceive by the inclosed Declaration, which I have the honor to transmit you, that Congress of late have been employed in deliberating on Matters of the utmost Importance. Impelled by Necessity and a Repetition of Injuries unsufferable without the most distant prospect of relief, they have asserted the Claims of the American Colonies to the rights of Humanity and declared them, Free and Independent States.⁹⁷

Judging from a variety of circumstances, that the British Arms are meant to be directed this Campaign against the State of New York, to effect Its reduction; they have empowered to order the three fullest Regiments of their Troops in the Massachusetts Bay, to reinforce our Northern Army, as you will see, by a Copy of their Resolve which I have inclosed; I have accordingly requested General Ward to detach them with all possible expedition, to join that Army and prevent the fatal and alarming consequences that would result from the Enemies passing the Lakes and making an impression on our Frontiers. I am almost morally certain, that no attempts will be made on the Massachusetts Bay; and if there should, they must prove abortive and ineffectual.

97. Whether Washington inclosed one of the John Dunlap broadsides of the Declaration of Independence or a manuscript copy is not known to the editor.

The Militia, Independent of other Troops, being more than competent to all the purposes of defensive War; However should it be deemed expedient by your Honble Body, Congress have Authorised you to embody and take into pay a Number of Militia, equal to the Regiments to be detached. I have etc.

To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE

Head Quarters, New York, July 9, 1776.

Sir: By a Letter received by Congress from Mr. Thomas Greene, Copy of which they did me the Honor to inclose, I have the Pleasure to hear of the Arrival of Capt. Chase with a Valuable Cargo

at Providence. and As that Honble. Body have been pleased to order the Flints at Rhode Island, belonging to the Continent, to be sent me here, (as pr. their Resolution Inclosed) I would therefore request, you would cause it to be done without the smallest delay, together with the small Arms which came in the Vessel. As to the Duck, if it is of the kind suitable for Tents, either the whole or part, I should be greatly obliged to you if you would order them made up as fast as possible, and forwarded to Norwich: but if it is Coarse and Stubborn, and of a Quality unfit for the above purpose, it will be unnecessary to give yourself any trouble about the Matter.

I am very sorry I cannot spare you a General officer, agreeable to your desire, to take the Command of the Forces belonging to Rhode Island, but in the present Critical juncture, it is utterly out of my power, to comply with your request. General Mercer is the only Officer who has no Brigade assign'd him, and at a time when we are in constant expectation of some important movement of the Enemy; his presence is so necessary here, that it cannot

possibly be dispensed with.—The best expedient that can be fallen upon, I presume, would be to give the Command to the Senior Officer of the Troops till a Brigadier is appointed. I have only to add, that I am with much respect.

To THE BOARD OF WAR AND ORDNANCE

New York, July 9, 1776.

Gentlemen: In Answer to your request communicated by Mr. Peters's⁹⁶ Letter of the 6th. Instant, I am to inform you that no Provision has yet been made in the Continental Army in the instances of your Inquiry, tho' I have been frequently applied to.

In respect to the Serjeant Majors and Quarter Master Serjeants, they have been exempted from common duties, which has been complained of by the rest. As to Drum and Fife Majors, in the British Army, their pay is generally made up out of Stoppages from that of the Drummers and Fifers, but it cannot be well done in ours, all stoppages being attended with difficulty and giving uneasiness. I would therefore propose, that an additional allowance of a Dollar per month should be made to their several pays as now established, as a sufficient compensation and satisfaction, for any extraordinary trouble attending their Offices. I have the Honor &ca.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 10, 1776.

Sir: I am now to acknowledge the receipt of your two favors of the 4th and 6th instants, which came duly to hand, with their important inclosures. I perceive that Congress have been employed in deliberating on measures of the most interesting Nature. It is certain that it is not with us to determine in many instances what consequences will flow from our Counsels, but yet it behoves us to adopt such, as under the

96. Richard Peters, secretary to the Board of War. The letter (July 6) asked if any allowances had been made for sergeant majors, drum and fife majors, and quartermaster sergeants, and, if none, what allowances ought to be made. His letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

smiles of a Gracious and all kind Providence will be most likely to promote our happiness; I trust the late decisive part they have taken, is calculated for that end, and will secure us that freedom and those priviledges, which have been, and are refused us, contrary to the voice of Nature and the British Constitution. Agreeable to the request of Congress I caused the Declaration to be proclaimed before all the Army under my immediate Command, and have the pleasure to inform them, that the measure seemed to have their most hearty assent; the Expressions and behaviour both of Officers and Men testifying their warmest approbation of it. I have transmitted a Copy to General Ward at Boston, requesting him to have it proclaimed to the Continental Troops in that Department.

It is with great pleasure that I hear the Militia from Maryland, the Delaware Government and Pennsylvania, will be in Motion every Day to form the Flying Camp. It is of great importance and should be accomplished with all possible dispatch. The readiness and alacrity with which the Committee of Safety of Pennsylvania and the other conferrees have acted in order to forward the Associated Militia of that State, to the Jerseys for service 'till the Men to compose the Flying Camp arrive, strongly evidence their regard to the Common Cause, and that nothing on their part will be wanting to support it. I hope and I doubt not, that the Associated Militia, impressed with the expediency of the Measure, will immediately carry it into execution and furnish in this instance a proof of the continuance of that Zeal which has so eminently marked their conduct. I have directed the Commissary to make necessary provision for their reception, who will also supply the Army for the Flying Camp with Rations. A proper Officer will be appointed to command it.⁶

6. The resolve of July 3 authorized Washington to make this appointment, which he conferred on Brig. Gen. Hugh Mercer.

In pursuance of the power given me by Congress and the advice of my General Officers, I have wrote to General Ward and desired him forthwith to detach three of the fullest Regiments from the Massachusetts Bay, to join the Northern Army, esteeming it a matter of the greatest importance to have a sufficient force there, to prevent the Enemy passing the Lake and making an impression in that Quarter. The Gondolas and Gallies will be of great service, and I am hopeful the Carpenters you have sent from Philadelphia, and that will go from the Eastward, on your application, will be able to build a sufficient number in time to answer every Exigency.⁷ I have requested Governor Cook if the Duck mentioned in Mr. Greene's Letter is proper for Tents, to have it made up as early as possible and forwarded here. I have also desired him to send the Flints and small Arms, as I have General Ward those of the latter that were taken out of the Scotch Transports; our deficiency in these necessary Articles being still great.

Observing that Congress have particularly mentioned a bounty of Ten Dollars to be paid to Men of some Corps directed to be raised in two or three instances, since their Resolve of the 26th. of June, allowing such Bounty, I have been led to doubt how that Resolve is to be construed, whether it is a general Regulation and extends to all Men that will engage for three Years; for instance, the Soldiers of the present Army, if they will Inlist for that service:⁸ If it is, and extends to them, it will be necessary to forward a large sum of Money; many perhaps would engage. I also observe by their Resolve of the 25th. of June, for raising four Regiments of Militia in the Eastern Governments, to augment the Troops in the Northern Department, that the Assemblies of those Governments are empowered to appoint Pay Masters to the said Regiments. This appears to me a regu

7. On July 5 Congress had asked Governor Cooke to send 50 ship carpenters to Albany. On July 6, 50 carpenters from Philadelphia under the lead of Captain Cardrop started for camp.—*Ford*.

8. On July 16 Congress resolved that General Washington be informed that the bounty granted June 26 was a general regulation, to extend to all men now in the service and all others who may enlist for a term of three years.

lation of great use, and I could wish that it was made general and one allowed to every Regiment in the Service, many advantages would result from it.

The Connecticut Militia begin to come in, but from every Account the Battalions will be very incomplete, owing they say to the busy season of the Year.

That Government, least any inconvenience might result from their Militia not being here in time, ordered three Regiments of their Light Horse to my Assistance, part of which have arrived, but not

having the means to support them, and if it could be done, the expence would be enormous, I have thanked the Gentlemen for their Zeal and the Attachment they have manifested upon this Occasion, and informed them that I cannot consent to their keeping their Horses, at the same time wishing them to stay themselves. I am told that they, or part of them mean to do so.

General Mercer is now in the Jerseys for the purpose of receiving and ordering the Militia coming for the Flying Camp, and I have sent over our chief Engineer to view the Ground within the Neighbourhood of Amboy, and lay out some necessary Works for the Encampment, and such as may be proper at the different passes in Bergen Neck, and other places on the Jersey Shore opposite Staten Island, to prevent the Enemy making impressions and committing depredations on the Property of the Inhabitants. The Intelligence we have from a few Deserters that have come over to us, and from others, is, that General Howe has between 9. and 10.000 Men, who are chiefly landed on the Island, posted in different parts, and securing the several communications from the Jerseys with small Works and Intrenchments, to prevent our people paying them a visit; that the Islanders have all joined them, seem well disposed to favor their Cause and have

agreed to take up Arms in their behalf. They look for Admiral Howe's arrival every day, with his Fleet and a large Reinforcement, are in high Spirits, and talk confidently of Success and carrying all before them when he comes. I trust through Divine Favor and our own Exertions they will be disappointed in their Views, and at all Events, any advantages they may gain will cost them very dear. If our Troops will behave well, which I hope will be the case, having every thing to contend for that Freeman hold dear, they will have to wade thro' much Blood and Slaughter before they can carry any part of our Works, if they carry them at all; and at best be in possession of a Melancholly and Mournfull Victory. May the Sacredness of our cause inspire our Soldiery with Sentiments of Heroism, and lead them to the performance of the noblest Exploits. With this Wish, I have the honor to be, etc.⁹

To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE OR, IN ITS RECESS, THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY

Head Quarters, New York, July 11, 1776.

Gentn.: At a Crisis like the present, when our Enemies are prosecuting a War with unexampled severity; when they have call'd upon foreign Mercenaries and have excited Slaves and Savages to Arms against us; a regard to our own Security and happiness, calls upon us to adopt every possible expedient to avert the Blow and prevent the meditated ruin.

Impressed with this Sentiment and impelled by Necessity, the Congress have been pleased to empower me, as you will perceive by the inclosed Copy of their Resolve, which I have the Honor of

transmitting you; to call to our Aid so many of the St. Johns, Nova Scotia, and Penobscott Indians, as I might judge necessary; at the same time they have desired, that I should request the Assistance of your Honble. Body,

9. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

in carrying their Views into execution, and to assure you, that whatever expences you may necessarily incur in doing it, and as incident to it, they will reimburse. Esteeming this Service of such Importance; particularly, if the Enemy should attempt an Impression into the Interior parts of the Country; I must intreat your kind Offices upon this occasion, and your friendly exertions immediately to engage on the best terms you can, five or Six hundred Men of these Tribes and have them marched with all possible expedition to join the Army here.

Having professed a strong Inclination to take part with us in the present Contest, It is probable they may be engaged for less pay and on better terms than the Continental Troops; but, if they cannot, they must be allowed it; The Term of their inlistment should be for two or three Years, unless sooner discharged (the right of which should be reserved us) if they will engage for so long a time; if not, for such time as they will agree to, provided it is not too short; and it must be part of the treaty, and enjoined upon them, to bring every Man his firelock, if it can be possibly effected. As the Services they may render will probably depend on their early and timely arrival, It is unnecessary to suggest to you, the necessity of the utmost dispatch in the Matter.

I well know the execution of the Work will be attended with some trouble and Inconvenience; but a consideration of the Benefits that may arise from employing them and your Zeal for the Common Cause, I am persuaded will surmount every Obstacle, and apologize for my requisition; especially as it comes recommended and supported by Authority of Congress. I have the Honor etc.

P.S. Since I had the honor of addressing you on the 9th Inst., I have received a Resolve from Congress, for calling the other two Continental Regiments from the Mass. Bay, to join the Army here, a Copy of which I have inclosed, and by the advice of my General Officers, have wrote General Ward, to detach them immediately;

the Accounts we have all agreeing, that Lord Howe is every day expected with 150 Transports with 15,000 Men at least, in addition to those already here.

To MAJOR GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER

New York, July 11, 1776.

Dear Sir: I received your Favour of the 1st. and 2nd. Inst. and agreeable to your Request transmitted Congress, a Copy of the former and of its several Inclosures. The important Subject referred to them, have met with their Attention, and the Letter accompanying this, will inform you and General Gates, of the Result of their Deliberations. I hope that Harmony, and a good Agreement will subsist between you, as the most likely Means to advance the Interest of the Cause you both wish to promote.¹⁴

They have determined the Matter between Mr. Trumbull and Mr. Livingston, and the Right of supplying the Northern Army, and appointing Persons for that Purpose, to be in the former.

I gave Orders immediately on Receipt of your Favour, for the several Articles you wrote for to be sent you, if they could be had. Ball or Buck Shot could not be spared from hence, and I directed a Quantity of Lead to be sent you, out of which you must attempt to have them made.¹⁵

I have not heard any Thing of the Money mentioned by Mr. Duane;¹⁶ I imagine it has not been sent. If any Accident had befallen it, the Matter would have been known ere now.

Since my last, General Howe's Fleet from Halifax has arrived; in Number about 130 Sail. His Army is between nine and ten Thousand, being joined by some of the Regiments from the West Indies, and having fallen in with

14. Gates's claim to command the Northern Department, when his instructions from Congress were explicit and definitely allotted him the command in Canada, would hardly have been advanced and pushed by him had he not been well aware of the New England influence in Congress in his favor. Despite the decision of Congress against him, his ambitions were sustained by such encouragement as Elbridge Gerry's letter of August 2, 1776: "We want very much to see you with the sole command in the northern department, but hope you will not relinquish your exertions, until a favorable opportunity shall effect it." This to a character like Gates was *carte blanche* to maneuver for the command, regardless of the effect of such actions upon the affairs of the Northern Department.

15. "What will become of our affairs in Canada, or rather in this Province in the Northern Department? Our General has more trouble and concern with that Department than his own, and yet after every step taken and supply sent, we are told of great necessities and wants arising from incredible *waste*. If Mr. Schuyler is so good a quarter-master and commissary, why is there such incredible waste? In short, my dear Sir, if some speedy and decisive measure is not taken in this

matter, in my opinion that army will waste and disperse, leaving the enemy an easy passage into the heart of these Colonies."—*Joseph Reed to Robert Morris*, July 18, 1776. This letter is from Reed's *Life and Correspondence of Joseph Reed*.

"Such scenes of mismanagement, misconduct, and ill success as have been exhibited in that quarter, ever since the loss of the brave Montgomery, have no parallel."—*Morris to Reed*, July 20, 1776. This letter is from Reed's *Life and Correspondence of Joseph Reed*.

16. James Duane, a New York Delegate to the Continental Congress.

Part of the Highland Troops, in his Passage. He has landed his Men on Staten Island, which they mean to secure, and is in daily Expectation of the Arrival of Lord Howe, with one Hundred and fifty Ships, with a large and powerful Reinforcement. This we have from four Prisoners which fell into our Hands and some Deserters; That an Advice Packet arrived at Hallifax before they left it, informing that he was ready to sail when they came from England, to join Genl. Howe here, in Consequence of which he came with the present Armament. They add, that nothing will be attempted 'till his Arrival. Their Intelligence, I have no Doubt, is well founded; indeed the Enemy, having done nothing yet affords Proof beyond Question, that they are waiting for more Troops. We are strengthening ourselves as much as possible, and deem their staying out so long, a fortunate Circumstance; as it not only gives us an Opportunity of advancing our Works; but of getting some Relief from the neighbouring Provinces. From every Appearance, they mean to make a most vigorous Push, to subdue us this Campaign; and for this Purpose to possess themselves of this Colony, if possible, as a Step leading to it. Our utmost Exertions must be used, and I trust, thro' the Favour of divine Providence, they will be disappointed in their Views.

As, having a large Number of Gondolas and Gallies on the Lakes, will be of great Importance, Mr. Hancock informs me in his Letter of the 6th. Inst., that fifty Carpenters were gone from Philadelphia, in Order to build them; and that he had wrote to Governor Cooke, to engage and forward the same Complement. I am advised by Governor Trumbull, in a Letter just received, that he has procured two Companies of twenty five each, who were about to set out. When they arrive, they will be able I am in Hopes,

to turn several of the Stocks in a little Time.

It being evident, that an Attempt will be made by General Burgoyne to penetrate and make an Impression into the Colonies, by Way of the Lakes, unless their is a sufficient Force to oppose him; I have exercised a discretionary Power, with which I was honoured by Congress, and ordered three of the fullest continental Regiments, that were stationed in the Massachusetts Government, to march

immediately on receiving my Orders, to join the northern Army. I have directed them to come to Norwich and there embark for Albany, hoping they will arrive as expeditiously in this Way, and with much less Fatigue, than if they had pursued their Rout by Land altogether, at this hot uncomfortable Season. These, with such Militia as may be furnished from the several Colonies required to provide them, and the Troops that were under General Sullivan in Canada, I flatter myself will be able and more than equal, to repel any Invasion that may be attempted from that Quarter. It will be some Time, before their Aid can be had, having never had the Authority of Congress to order them, 'till within this Week.

You will perceive by the inclosed Declaration, that Congress of late have been deliberating on Matters of the utmost Importance. Impelled by Necessity and a Repetition of Injuries no longer sufferable, without the most distant Prospect of Relief, they have asserted the Claims of the Colonies to the Rights of Humanity, absolved them from all Allegiance to the British Crown, and declared them *free and independent States* . In Obedience to their Order, the same must be proclaimed throughout the northern Army.

A Prisoner taken

Yesterday, belonging to the 10th. Regiment, informs that Admiral Howe is hourly expected. He adds, that a Vessel has arrived from his Fleet. I am etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 11, 1776.

Sir: I was honored with your favor of the 8th. inst. by Yesterday morning's Post, with the several Resolves to which you referred my attention; I shall duly regard them, and attempt their execution as far as I am able.

By Virtue of the discretionary powers that Congress were pleased to vest me with, and by advice of such of my General Officers, as I have had an Opportunity of consulting, I have ordered the two remaining Continental Regiments in the Massachusetts Bay, to march immediately for the defence of this place, in full confidence that nothing Hostile will be attempted against that State in the present Campaign.

I have wrote to the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, and transmitted a Copy of the Resolve for employing the Eastern Indians, entreating their good Offices in this Instance, and their exertions to

have them forthwith engaged and marched to join this Army. I have desired five or Six hundred of them, to be Inlisted for two or three years if they will consent to it, subject to an earlier discharge, if it shall be thought necessary and upon the same Terms of the Continental Troops, If better cannot be had, though I am hopeful they may.

In my Letter of Yesterday, I mentioned the Arrival of part of the Connecticut Light Horse, to assist in the defence of this place and my Objection to their Horses being kept; Four or Five hundred of them are now come in, and in Justice to their Zeal and laudable attachment to the Cause of their Country, I am to inform you they have consented to stay as long as occasion may require, though they should be at the expence of maintaining their Horses themselves, they have pastured them out about the neighbourhood of Kings Bridge,

being unwilling to send them away, at the rate of half a Dollar per Week each, meaning to leave it intirely with Congress either to allow, or refuse it, as they shall Judge proper: I promised to make this Representation, and thought it my duty and will only observe the motives which induced them at first to set out, were good and praise worthy, and were to afford the most speedy and early succour which they apprehended would be wanted before the Militia arrived; their services may be extremely Important, being most of them, if not all, Men of Reputation and of property.

The Subject of the inclosed copy of a Letter from Governor Trumbull, I beg leave to submit to the Consideration of Congress. They will perceive from his representation, the disquieting apprehensions that have seized on the minds of the people, since the retreat of the Northern Army, and how exposed the Northern frontiers of New York and New Hampshire are to the Ravages and Incursions of the Indians. How far it may be expedient to raise the Battalion he conceives necessary to prevent the Calamities and distresses he points out, they will determine upon what he has said, and the necessity that may appear to them for the Measure,¹⁰ what I have done, being only meant to lay the matter before them in Compliance with his wishes. I have also Inclosed a Memorial from the Surgeons Mates, setting forth the Inadequacy of their pay to their Services and maintainance, and praying that it may be increased. I shall observe that they have a long time complained in this Instance, and that some additional allowance may not be unnecessary.

As I am truly sensible the time of Congress is much taken up with a variety of Important matters, It is with unwillingness and pain I ever repeat a request after having once made it, or take the Liberty of enforcing any Opinion of mine after it is once given, but as the establishing some Office for Auditing Accounts is a matter of

10. Governor Trumbull had written (July 4): "The Retreat of the Northern Army and its present Situation, have spread a general Alarm....The prevalence of the small pox among them [the troops] is every way unhappy; our people in general have not had that Distemper. Fear of the Infection operates strongly to prevent Soldiers from engaging in the Service, and the Battalions ordered to be raised in this Colony fill up slowly: are there no Measures may be taken to remove the Impediment? ...The retreat of the Army from Canada exposes the Northern Frontiers of New York and New Hampshire to the Ravages of the Indians, who will doubtless be spirited up to fall upon them; some of the Settlements on Onion River, I am informed, are breaking up and removing, and the whole are filled with the most disquieting Apprehension....I could therefore wish, that your Excellency might think proper to recommend to the continental Congress to order a Battalion to be raised and stationed there for the defence of those Settlements." His letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

exceeding importance to the Public Interest, I would beg leave once more to call the attention of Congress to an appointment competent to the purposes: two motives induce me to urge the matter; first, a conviction of the utility of the measure; Secondly, that I may stand exculpated, if hereafter it should appear that money has been improperly expended, and the Expences for the Army obtained upon unreasonable Terms.

For me, whose time is employed from the hour of my rising 'till I retire to bed again, to go into an examination of the Accounts of such an Army as this, with any degree of precision and exactness, without neglecting other matters of equal Importance, is utterly Impracticable; All that I have ever been able to do, and that in fact was doing nothing, was when the Commissary and Quarter Master and Director General of the Hospital (for it is to these the great advances are made), applied for Warrants, to make them at times produce a General Account of their expenditures, but this answers no valuable purpose, it is the Minutiæ that must be gone into, the propriety of each Charge examined, the Vouchers looked into; and with respect to the Commissary General, his victualling returns and expenditures of Provisions should be compared with his purchases, otherways a person in this department, if he was inclined to be knavish, might purchase large quantities with the Public Money and sell one half of it again for private emolument and yet his Accounts upon paper would appear fair and be supported with Vouchers for every Charge.

I do not urge this matter

from a Suspicion of any unfair practices in either of the departments before mentioned, and sorry should I be if this Construction was put upon it, having a high Opinion of the Honor and Integrity of these Gentlemen, but there should nevertheless be some control, as well upon their discretion as

honesty; to which may be added that accounts become perplexed and confused by long standing and the errors therein not so discovered as if they underwent an early revision and examination.

I am well apprized, that a Treasury Office of Accounts has been resolved upon and an Auditor General for settling all public Accounts; but with all deference and Submission to the Opinion of Congress, these Institutions are not calculated to prevent the Inconveniences I have mentioned, nor can they be competent to the purposes, circumstanced as they are.¹¹

We have intelligence from a deserter that came to us, that on Wednesday Morning, the Asia, Chatham and Greyhound Men of War weighed Anchor, and it was said, intended to pass up the North River above the City to prevent the communication with the Jerseys, they did not attempt it, nor does he know what prevented them.

A Prisoner belonging to the 10th. Regt. taken Yesterday, informs that they hourly expect Admiral Howe and his Fleet, he adds that a Vessel has arrived from them and the prevailing Opinion is, that an Attack will be made immediately on their Arrival.

By a Letter from General Ward I am informed that the Small Pox has broke out at Boston and infested some of the Troops. I have wrote him to place the Invalids under an Officer to remain 'till they are well and to use every possible precaution to prevent the Troops coming from thence, bringing the Infection.

The distresses and Calamities we have already suffered by this disorder in one part of our Army, I hope will excite his utmost care, that they may not be increased. I have the Honor to be &ca.¹²

11. Auditors for handling the accounts of the main army were not appointed until January, 1778.

12. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison and sent unsigned.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 12, 1776.

Sir: The design of this is to inform Congress that at about half after three O'Clock this Evening, two of the Enemy's Ships of War, one of 40 and the other of 20 Guns with three Tenders weighed Anchor in the Bay opposite Staten Island and availing themselves of a brisk and favourable breeze, with a flowing Tide, run past our Batteries up the North River, without receiving any certain damage that

I could perceive, notwithstanding a heavy and incessant Cannonade was kept up from our several Batteries here as well as from that at Paulus Hook. They on their part returned and continued the fire as they run by. I dispatched an Express to Brigadier General Mifflin, at our Encampment towards the upper end of the Island, but have not heard whether they have got by or received any Damage.

The Account transmitted by this Morning's Post respecting the arrival of one of the Fleet, seems to be confirmed. Several Ships have come in to day. among them, one this Evening with a St. George's Flag at her Fore topmast head which we conclude to be Admiral Howe, from the circumstance of the Flag and the several and General Salutes, that were paid. It is probable they will all arrive in a Day or two and immediately begin their operations.

As it will be extremely necessary, that the flying Camp should be well provided with Powder and Ball, and it may be impracticable to send supplies from hence on Account of our hurry and engagements, besides the Communication may be uncertain. I must beg the attention of Congress to this matter, and request that they will forward with all possible expedition, such a Quantity of Musket powder and Lead. If Balls of different Sizes can not be had, as will be sufficient for the Militia to compose that Camp.

By an Express this minute from General Mifflin the Ships have past his Works. I am in haste, etc.¹⁸

18. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

To BRIGADIER GENERAL GEORGE CLINTON

Head Quarters, New York, July 12, 1776.¹⁹

Sir: Two Ships of Force with their Tenders have sailed up Hudson's River.²⁰ I am apprehensive, that they design to seize the Passes in the Highlands by Land, which I am informed may be done by a small Body of Men. I must, therefore request you, instantly to desire General Ten Broeck,²¹ to march down as great a Force as he can collect to secure them, particularly the Post where the Road runs over Anthony's Nose.

Send off an Express directly (if you please) to the West Parts of Connecticut, desiring them to collect all their Force at the same Point, since I have the highest Reason to believe, it will be absolutely necessary, if it was only to prevent an Insurrection of your own Tories. I am, etc.

P.S. A Return must be immediately made to me of the Number of Men you collect.²²

To CAPTAIN PATRICK DENNIS²⁵

Head Quarters, July 13, 1776.

Sir: Mr. Duer informs me, that there are two or three Vessels lying at the Dock of Mr. Beverley Robinson in the Highlands. As it is probable, the Men of War which sailed up the River Yesterday, may have anchored to the northward of those Ships, I think it absolutely necessary that an Attempt should be made to secure those Vessels for future Service.

19. On July 12 Washington proposed to a council of war the question of a general attack on the enemy's quarters on Staten Island, but it was unanimously agreed that such a step was not advisable. "To alarm the Enemy and encourage our own Troops, who seem generally desirous something should be done," the Commander in Chief then proposed "That Major Knowlton who is stationed at Bergen and has reconnoitred the Island do confer with General Mercer thereon, and if they upon Consideration shall deem such a Surprise practicable and that the Retreat of the Men can be secured, the General be advised to prosecute it. That this Enterprise be accompanied with a Cannonade upon the fleet from Bergen Point if the Distance will admit." The council consisted of the Commander in Chief, Maj. Gen. Israel Putnam, and Brig. Gens. William Heath, Joseph Spencer, Nathanael Greene, Lord Stirling, John Morin Scott, James Wadsworth, and Nathaniel Heard. The proceedings of the council, in the writing of Joseph Reed, are in the *Washington Papers*. Lord Stirling's plan for attacking Staten Island, dated July, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

20. The *Phoenix*, of 40 guns, and the *Rose*, of 20, with three tenders, were sent up the Hudson to cut off supplies which came down the river to New York. They anchored in Tappan Bay. Clinton had already stationed regiments at Fort Constitution, Fort Montgomery, and Newburgh, and ordered a chain of craft to be ready to act as fireboats at the Narrows at Fort Constitution.

21. Brig. Gen. Petrus Ten Broeck, of the New York Militia.

22. Precisely this same letter was sent to the Dutchess County, N.Y., Committee on July 13.

25. A sea captain and New York Bay pilot.

I have, therefore to desire the Favour of you, to procure proper Persons to bring these Vessels down the River, and to anchor them under the Fort where General Mifflin commands.

It is absolutely necessary, that this Matter should be conducted with the utmost Secrecy, and Dispatch, and as I am of Opinion that you possess these Requisites, I have thought proper to apply to you, for your Services in this Matter. I am, etc.

To THE SECRET COMMITTEE OF THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE²³

Head Quarters, July 13, 1776.

Gentn: A mutiplicity of engagements, and a Continual pressure of other Concerns, has prevented proceeding in the case of the Soldiers confined for seditious and treasonable practices; but as soon as time will admit, a proper attention will be paid to it: In the mean time, I beg leave to suggest the propriety of the Authority of the Province, taking some steps, with regard to those persons confined by them for the same offences. They certainly are to be deemed the principals, and Justice to the inferior Agents, while the others pass unnoticed, I observe, only excites compassion and censure. I am very sensible, it is a case full of difficulty and perplexity, and well deserving your most serious deliberations; nor do I entertain a doubt, but the result will be such, as will conduce to the Public good. I have, some time ago, mentioned to the Body, of which you are a Committee, the Necessity of falling upon some Measure to remove, from this City and its Environs, Persons of known disaffection and Enmity to the Cause of America. The safety of the Army, the Success of every Enterprize, and the Security of all, depends so much on adopting the most Speedy and effectual Steps for the purpose, that I beg leave again to repeat it; and do most earnestly intreat you to fall upon some plan for this purpose, or give me your Assistance so to do,

23. The New York Congress had appointed a committee in May, 1776, to deal with "intestine enemies." A standing committee of five was appointed May 27, 1776, and later increased to nine members, with enlarged powers, to function until the committee was dissolved by the Congress. In September, 1776, this committee was given a perfected organization, to which the county committees became subordinate. This organization was dissolved in February, 1777, and was succeeded by a legislative committee of three, soon after increased to five, and, in August, 1778, again enlarged to nine members, who became known as the Commissioners for Detecting and Defeating Conspiracies. As the British held New York City from 1776 to the end of the war, this committee moved from place to place in exercisng its functions. The whole system in New York is comprehensively treated in Flick's *Loyalism in New York during the American Revolution* (New York:

1901) (*Columbia University Studies in History, etc.*, vol. 14, p. 1). At the date of this letter the personnel of the committee was: Robert Yates, John Jay, Robert R. Livingston, Christopher Tappan, and Gilbert Livingston.

as to remove those disquieting and discouraging apprehensions, which pervade the whole Army on this Subject. A suspicion, that there are many Ministerial Agents among us, would justly alarm Soldiers of more experience and discipline than ours; and I foresee very dangerous Consequences, in many respects, if a Remedy to the evil is not soon and efficaciously applied.

The removal of the Tory Prisoners, confined in the Gaol of this City, is a matter to which I would Solicit your attention, in every View it appears dangerous and improper. In case of an Attack and Alarm, there can be no doubt what part they will take and none can tell what Influence they might have. You will, Gentlemen, do me the justice to believe, that nothing but the Importance and necessity of the Case, could induce me thus to urge these matters, in which you have also an immediate and Common Interest.²⁴ The Gentlemen appointed to give passes to persons leaving the City, I am informed decline acting. Great Inconvenience will ensue to the Citizens, if this Business should be Committed to Officers of the Army, who from their ignorance of the Inhabitants, as well as other reasons are wholly improper for the management of it. I should be glad if your Committee will take this Matter also into their Consideration. I am etc.

To THE OFFICER COMMANDING THE PENNSYLVANIA TROOPS AT TRENTON OR ELSEWHERE IN NEW JERSEY

Head Quarters, New York, July 14, 1776.

Sir: From sundry Accounts received of the Troops under your Command, I have Reason to believe they will halt at Trenton, and there wait further Orders. As I do not see any Advantage which can arise from your

24. Sparks notes that this representation had its effect. Thirteen Tory prisoners, including the persons most obnoxious for their principles and conduct, were speedily removed by order of the convention to the jail at Litchfield in Connecticut. Two lists of loyalist prisoners confined in the city hall, New York, are in the *Washington Papers*, under the assigned date of July 1, 1776.

Continuance there, and the Honble. Continental Congress have committed the Disposition of them to me, until the flying Camp is formed, you will on Receipt of this proceed to Amboy in New Jersey,

where General Mercer is appointed to command, and there putting yourself under his Direction, receive and obey such Orders, as he may give. I am, etc.

To THE PRESIDENT OF CONGRESS

New York, July 14, 1776.

Sir: My last of Friday evening which I had the Honor of addressing you, advised that two of the Enemy's Ships of War and three Tenders had run above our Batteries here and the Works at the upper end of the Island.

I am now to inform you, that Yesterday forenoon, receiving Intelligence from General Mifflin that they had past the Tappan Sea and were trying to proceed higher up; by advice of R. R. Livingston Esqr. and other Gentlemen, I dispatched expresses to General Clinton, of Ulster and the Committee of Safety for Dutchess County, to take Measures for securing the passes in the Highlands, least they might have designs of seizing them and have a force concealed for the purpose.

I wrote the Evening before to the commanding Officer of the Two Garrisons there, to be vigilant and prepared against any attempts they or any disaffected persons might make against them and to forward Expresses all the way to Albany that Provision and other Vessels might be secured and prevented falling into their Hands. The information given General Mifflin

was rather premature as to their having gone past the Sea. A Letter from the Committee of Orange County, which came to hand this Morning says they were there Yesterday, and that a Regiment of their Militia was under Arms, to prevent their Landing and making an Incursion.

The Messenger who brought it, and to whom it refers for particulars, adds "that a party of them in two or three boats, had approached the Shore, but were forced back by our people firing at them." Since the manuvre of Friday, there have been no other movements in the Fleet.

General Sullivan in a letter of the 2d. Inst. informs me of his arrival with the Army at Crown Point, where he is fortifying and throwing up Works; he adds, that he has secured all the Stores, except three Cannon left at Chamblee, which in part is made up by taking a fine Twelve pounder out of the Lake; The Army is sickly, many with the small pox, and he is apprehensive the Militia ordered to join them will not escape the Infection; An Officer he had sent to reconnoitre, had reported, that he saw at St. Johns about 150 Tents, 20 at St. Roys, and 15 at Chamblee, and works at the first were busily carrying on.

I have inclosed a General return of the Army here which will shew the whole of our Strength. All the detached posts are included.³¹

A Letter from the Eastward by last night's post, to Mr. Hazard³² Post Master in this City, advises that two Ships has been taken and carried into Cape Ann; one from Antigua, consigned to General Howe with 439 Puncheons of Rum. The other a Jamaicaman with 400 Hogsheads of Sugar, 200 puncheons of Rum, 39 Bales of Cotton, Pimento, Fustick, etc., etc. Each mounted 2 Guns;

31. This return, dated July 13, showed a strength of 10,319 rank and file present and fit for duty, with 963 officers. There were nearly 1,500 sick and nearly 2,000 on command. The artillery regiment was 426 strong, with 54 officers.

32. Ebenezer Hazard. He was, later, Postmaster General of the United States.

Six Pounders.

About 3. O'Clock this afternoon I was informed that a Flag from Lord Howe was coming up and waited with two of our Whale Boats untill directions should be given. I immediately convened such of the General Officers, as were not upon other duty, who agreed in Opinion that I ought not to receive any Letter directed to me as a private Gentleman; but if otherwise and the Officer desired to come up to deliver the Letter himself, as was suggested, he should come under a safe conduct: Upon this I directed Col. Reed to go down and manage the Affair under the above general Instruction: On his return he informed me, after the common civilities the Officer acquainted him, that he had a Letter from Lord Howe to Mr. Washington, which he shewed under a superscription "*to George Washington Esquire.*" Col. Reed replied there was no such person in the Army, and that a Letter Intended for the General could not be received under such a direction. The Officer expressed great concern, said it was a Letter rather of a Civil than Military Nature; That Lord Howe regretted he had not arrived sooner; That he (Lord Howe) had great Powers. The anxiety to have the Letter received was very evident, tho' the Officer disclaimed all Knowledge of its Contents; However Col. Reeds Instructions being positive, they parted. After they had got some distance, the Officer with the Flag, again put about and asked under what direction Mr. Washington chose to be addressed,³³ to which Col. Reed answered his station was well known, and that certainly they could be at no Loss how to direct to him. The Officer said they knew It and lamented It, and again repeated

33. "He [Lieutenant Brown of the *Eagle*] then asked me under what title General,—but catching himself, Mr. Washington chose to be addressed."— *Reed to Pettit*, July 15, 1776. This letter is from Reed's *Life and Correspondence of Joseph Reed*.

his wish that the Letter could be received. Col. Reed told him, a proper direction would obviate all difficulties, and that this was no new Matter. This Subject having been fully discussed in the course of the last year of which Lord Howe could not be ignorant, upon which they parted.

I would not upon any occasion sacrifice Essentials to Punctilio, but in this Instance the Opinion of others, concurring with my own, I deemed it a duty to my Country and my Appointment, to insist upon that respect, which in any other than a public view I would willingly have waived. Nor do I doubt but from the supposed nature of the Message and the anxiety expressed, they will either repeat their Flag, or fall upon some mode to communicate the Import and consequence of It.³⁴

I have been duly honoured with your two Letters, that of the 10th. by Mr. Anderson, and the 11th. with its inclosures. I have directed the Quarter Master to provide him with every thing he wants to carry his scheme into Execution. It is an Important one, and I wish it success, but I am doubtfull that it will be better in Theory than practice.³⁵

The passage of the Ships of War and Tenders up the River, is a matter of great importance, and has excited much conjecture and speculation; to me two things have occurred as leading them to this proceeding; first, a design to seize on the narrow passes on both Sides the River, giving almost the only Land Communication with Albany, and of consequence with our northern Army, and for which purpose they might have Troops concealed on board, which they deemed competent of themselves as the defiles are narrow,

34. On July 17 Congress passed the following resolution: "That General Washington, in refusing to receive a letter said to be sent from Lord Howe, and addressed to 'George Washington, Esqr.' acted with a dignity becoming his station; and, therefore, this Congress do highly approve the same, and do direct, that no letter or message be received, on any occasion whatsoever from the enemy, by the commander in chief, or other, the commanders of the American army, but such as shall be directed to them in the characters they respectively sustain. Ordered, That the above be published."

35. Ephraim Anderson proposed to destroy the British Fleet at New York. Hancock had written to Washington (July 10): "The Congress are willing to give him an opportunity of trying the experiment, and have therefore thought proper to refer him to you." Anderson had made an attempt of this kind

at Quebec; but the enemy received intelligence of it and, stretching a cable across the mouth of the harbor, rendered entrance impossible. He was adjutant to the Second Jersey Battalion.— *Ford*.

or that they would be joined by many disaffected Persons in that Quarter; others have added a probability of their haveing a large Quantity of Arms on board, to be in readiness to put into the hands of the Tories immediately on the arrival of the Fleet, or rather at the Time they intend to make their attack: The second, is to cut off entirely all Intercourse between this and Albany by Water and the upper Country, and to prevent Supplies of every kind going and coming. These matters are truly Alarming and of such Importance, that I have wrote to the Provincial Congress of New York and recommended to their serious consideration, the adoption of every possible expedient, to guard against the two first, and have suggested the propriety of their employing the Militia or such part of them in the Counties in which these defiles are to keep the Enemy from possessing them till further Provision can be made, and to write to the several leading Persons on our side, in that Quarter, to be attentive to all the Movements of the Ships and the Disaffected in order to discover and frustrate whatever pernicious Schemes they have in view.³⁶

In respect to the second conjecture of my own and which seems to be generally adopted, I have the Pleasure to inform Congress, That If their design is to keep the Armies from Provision, that the Commissary has told me upon Inquiry he has forwarded supplies to Albany, now there and above it, sufficient for 10,000 Men for four Months. That he has a sufficiency here for 20,000 Men for three Months and an Abundant Quantity secured

36. The ships passed all the batteries without receiving any apparent injury. The decks were guarded with ramparts of sandbags, which protected the men from small shot, and the motion of the vessels was so rapid that they remained but a very short time within the range of the heavy guns. They ascended to the broad part of the river called Haverstraw Bay and anchored so far from shore on either side as to be out of danger. Their boats were daily sent out to take soundings. When they occasionally attempted to land they were beaten back by the militia, who watched them narrowly on both sides of the river.— *Sparks*.

in different parts of the Jersey for the flying Camp, besides having 4,000 Barrells of Flour in some Neighbouring part of Connecticut.

Upon this head there is but little occasion for any apprehensions, at least for a Considerable Time. I have &ca.

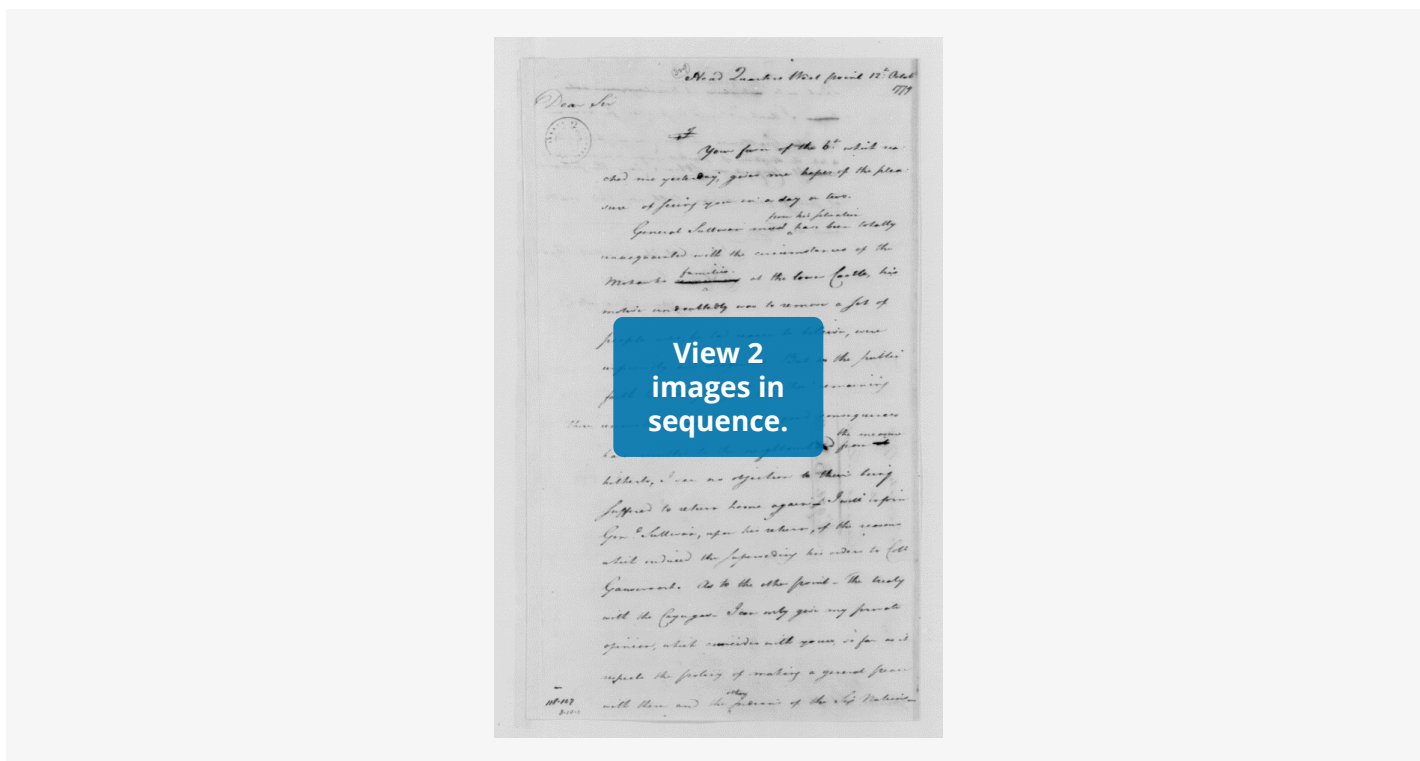
P.S. I have sent orders to the Commanding Officer of the Pennsylvania Militia to March to Amboy as there remaining at Trenton can be of no good Service.³⁷

37. In the Writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.



MANUSCRIPT/MIXED MATERIAL

George Washington Papers, Series 4, General Correspondence: George Washington to John Schuyler, October 12, 1779



Download:

GIF (86.9 KB)



Go

About this Item

Title

George Washington Papers, Series 4, General Correspondence: George Washington to John Schuyler, October 12, 1779

Created / Published

[Skip to main content](#)

Subject Headings

- United States
- Manuscripts

Genre

Manuscripts

Call Number/Physical Location

series: Series 4, General Correspondence, 1697-1799

MSS 44693: Reel 061

Source Collection

George Washington papers

Repository

Manuscript Division

Online Format

image

Part of

[George Washington Papers: Series 4, General Correspondence, 1697 to 1799 \(34,250\)](#)

[George Washington Papers \(35,444\)](#)

[Manuscript Division \(167,258\)](#)

Format

[Manuscript/Mixed Material](#)

Dates

[1779](#)

Locations

[United States](#)

Languages

[English](#)

Subjects

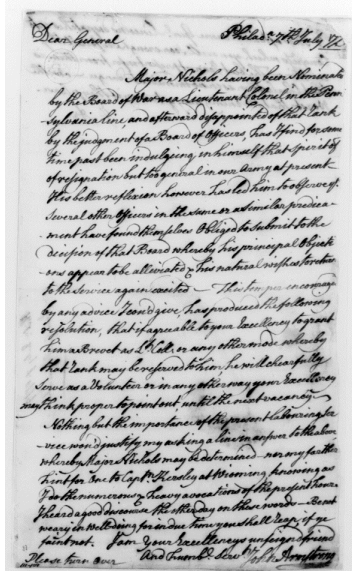
[Manuscripts](#)

[Skip to main content](#)

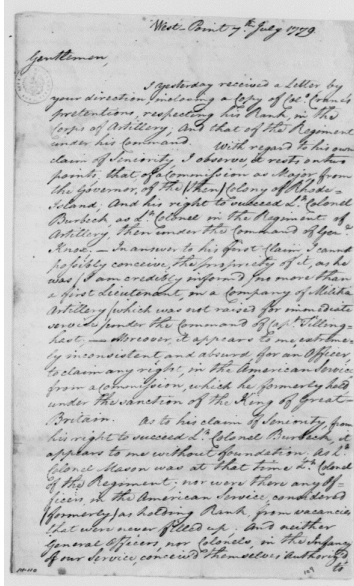
+ Rights & Access

+ Cite This Item

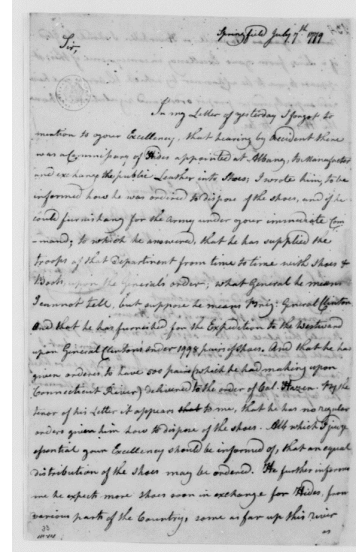
More Manuscripts/Mixed Material like this



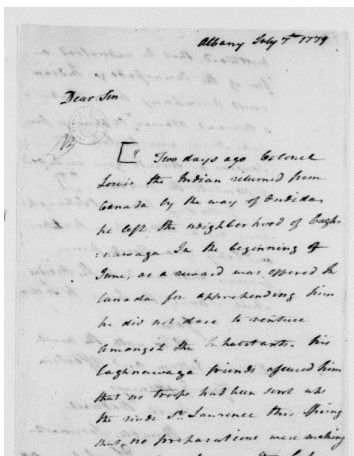
MANUSCRIPT/MIXED MATERIAL
George Washington Papers, Series 4, General Correspondence: John Armstrong to George Washington, July 7, 1779



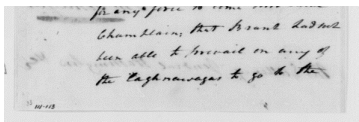
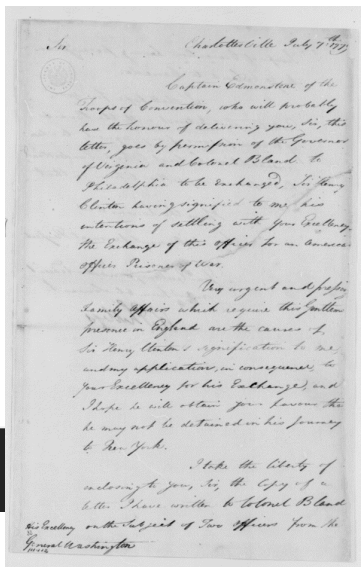
MANUSCRIPT/MIXED MATERIAL
George Washington Papers, Series 4, General Correspondence: John Lamb to Continental Army General Officers Board, July ...



MANUSCRIPT/MIXED MATERIAL
George Washington Papers, Series 4, General Correspondence: George Measam to George Washington, July 7, 1779



Skip to main content



MANUSCRIPT/MIXED MATERIAL
George Washington Papers, Series 4, General Correspondence: Philip J. Schuyler to George Washington, July 7, 1779

You might also like

George Washington Papers, Series 4, General

The Diaries of
GEORGE WASHINGTON
Volume I
1748-65

BOOK/PRINTED MATERIAL
The diaries of George Washington



PHOTO, PRINT, DRAWING
Patsy T. Mink Papers: Patsy T. Mink's University of Chicago Law School class at the time ...



PHOTO, PRINT, DRAWING
Patsy T. Mink Papers: Patsy T. Mink campaigning for Congress with family and supporters, circa 1966.



[Skip to main content](#)



PHOTO, PRINT, DRAWING

349
Head Quarters West point 12th Octob^r
1779

Dear Sir



I

Your favor of the 6th which reached me yesterday, gives me hopes of the pleasure of seeing you in a day or two.

General Sullivan must ^{from his situation} have been totally unacquainted with the circumstances of the Mohawks ~~removal~~ ^{family} at the lower Castle, his motive undoubtedly was to remove a set of people who, he had reason to believe, were unfriendly and dangerous. But as the public faith has been pledged for their remaining there unmolested, and you say good consequences have resulted to the neighbourhood ^{the measure} from ~~it~~ hitherto, I see no objection to their being suffered to return home again. I will inform Gen^l Sullivan, upon his return, of the reasons which induced the superseding his orders to Col Ganoersok. As to the other point - The treaty with the Cayugas - I can only give my private opinion, which coincides with yours, so far as it respects the policy of making a general peace with them and the ^{other} Indians of the Six Nations.

Particular Terms
But as to ~~selections of territory and other~~

~~_____~~ I think it will be proper for you and

the ~~the~~ Gentlemen in the Commission to
to take the direction of should they enquire to an accommodation
~~_____~~ Congress. — When I have the pleasure

of seeing you we can talk over this matter
more at large. —

I am with the greatest regard

Dear Sir

Yours sincerely.

12th October 1779

General Schuyler

N^o 971. B. X. 130

General Schuyler.